THE REVERIE; OR, A FLIGHT TO THE PARADISE of FOOLS.

All Things vain, or all who in vain Things
Build their fond Hopes of Glory, or lasting Fame,
Or Happineſs in this or th'other Life.

MILTON.

BY THE
EDITOR of the ADVENTURES of a GUINEA.

VOLUME THE SECOND.

DUBLIN:
Printed by DILLON CHAMBERLAINE, in Smock-alley.
MDCCLXII.

THE REVERIE;

OR A

FLIGHT

TO THE

PARADISE OF FOOLS.

BRITISH MUSEUM

All Things vain, or all who in vain Things
Build their fond Hopes of Glory, or lasting Fame,
Or Happiness in this or th'other Life.

Milton.

BY THE

EDITOR of the ADVENTURES of a GUINEA.

VOLUME THE SECOND.

DUBLIN:

Printed by Dillon Chamberlaine, in Smock-alley.

MDCCLXII.

CONTENTS.

BOOK the FIRST.

CHAP. I.

The ſcheme changes with the ſcene. A remarkable inſtance of military equity. The ſoldier's view in war. Every man for himſelf, the rule in war as well as peace. Page 1

CHAP. II.

A gilded bait to catch a gudgeon. The beſt cure for a matrimonial ſurfeit; with a new motive for entering into the military life. p. 6

CHAP. III.

A toilet ſet out in a new taſte. The advantage of knowing how to play one inconvenience againſt another; with an intereſting inſtance of love and honour in the modern ſtyle. p. 12

CHAP. IV.

War! Horrid war! They'll never want employment who think themſelves well paid for their pains with a mouthful of moonſhine. The great channel of ſecret intelligence. p. 17

CHAP. V.

The longeſt way about is often the neareſt way home. The pleaſure

pleasure of comparing notes creates friendship in affliction. A new species of knight-errantry. p. 21

CHAP. VI.

History of a remarkable lady. The great benefit of polite education, with the force of good example. Common occurrences of various kinds, and their natural consequences. p. 25

CHAP. VII.

Continued. An unusual effect of absence. The loss of reputation sometimes inconvenient. Reflections on a qualification which all pretend to, and few possess; with a curious account of a man of consequence. p. 30

CHAP. VIII.

Continued. A short way of making love. Bargains best made in few words; with an odd instance of old-fashioned folly. p. 35

CHAP. IX.

Continued. Many buyers raise the market. On ballancing avarice and vanity the former kicks the beam. p. 39

CHAP. X.

Continued. Listeners seldom like what they hear. The danger of provoking high blood; with the great merit of peace-making in the modern way. p. 44

CHAP. XI.

Concluded. A relapse is often worse than the first disorder. By the help of good friends, the grey mare proves the better horse. The whole concluded with some interesting reflections, which prove that people should look before they leap. p. 48

CHAP.

CHAP. XII.

One ſtory generally introduces another. The true object of female attention to dreſs. Common conſequences of faſhionable intimacy, and female friendſhip, with the ſecret of making a right uſe of a ſhoeing-horn. p. 53

CHAP. XIII.

More military matters. Politics on one ſide of the queſtion. p. 58

CHAP. XIV.

A new ſcheme for carrying on a war. An ill-timed doubt often diſconcerts a good ſtory. Anecdotes of a loyal family. The hiſtory of Sir ARCHIBALD, *and* ZELIDE, *princeſs of* Armenia. p. 63

CHAP. XV.

The hiſtory of Sir ARCHIBALD, *and* ZELIDE, *princeſs of* Armenia, *continued.* p. 72

CHAP. XVI.

Continuation of the hiſtory of Sir ARCHIBALD *and* ZELIDE, *princeſs of* Armenia. p. 78

CHAP. XVII.

The hiſtory of Sir ARCHIBALD *and* ZELIDE, *princeſs of* Armenia, *concluded.* p. 83

CHAP. XVIII.

Anecdotes of a loyal family concluded. Several inſtances of uncommon loyalty rewarded in the common manner, with ſome reflections intereſting to thoſe whom they may concern. p. 90

CHAP.

CHAP. XIX.

The difference between fighting battles in the field, and in the cabinet. The happineſs of having good friends, with further inſtances of military equity. p. 93

CHAP. XX.

War! War in procinct! The comforts of Greatneſs. *A night-ſcene, with a continuation of it, neither of the moſt agreeable nature.* p. 97

CHAP. XXI.

An approved medicine for a ſick mind. A curious converſation between two great *perſons, with a compendious method of acquiring fame.* p. 102

CHAP. XXII.

A remarkable inſtance of poetic gratitude and juſtice, with ſome anecdotes of a celebrated genius. p. 109

BOOK the SECOND.

CHAP. I.

A council ſcene. The mildneſs of female government; with a remarkable inſtance of the happy effect of reproof upon great minds. p. 112

CHAP. II.

A ready ſalve for a ſore conſcience, with a proper reward for piety. An unexpected diſappointment ſhews greatneſs of ſoul in a ſtriking light. A day concluded conſiſtently. p. 116

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

More happy effects of greatness; with a new way of punishing disobedience, and making the most of power. p. 122

CHAP. IV.

Account of an uncommon kind of council; with its natural conclusion. p. 125

CHAP. V.

Mystery of favouritism. A remarkable instance of the art of making the most of a misfortue. p. 130

CHAP. VI.

Continued. A mirrour for the female mind. Fear and resentment triumphant over love and virtue. p. 134

CHAP. VII.

Mystery of favouritism concluded. The necessary effects of ridicule. Ministerial use of unlimited power; with the natural consequence of ill-placed confidence. p. 138

CHAP. VIII.

The scene changed. A national character. Another great man. Curious account of an inn, with an entertainment of political puffs. p. 142

CHAP. IX.

Wheels within wheels. Certain great transactions deduced from unsuspected causes; with the advantage of having two strings to a bow. p. 146

CHAP.

CHAP. X.

More great matters. Home truths. A character out of nature; with a new definition of the laws of war; and a certain method of reducing a nation to obedience. p. 150

CHAP. XI.

A peep behind the curtain. Royal amuſements; heroic principles and valour; with an approved ſhield againſt certain terrible dangers. p. 155

CHAP. XII.

Scene changed. Pleaſant inſtance of the power of example. Grand attendance at a lady's toilet. Secrets of favouritiſm. p. 159

CHAP. XIII.

Make hay while the ſun ſhines. All go to the market where they can have moſt for their money. A converſation concluded in character. p. 166

CHAP. XIV.

A curious, though not an uncommon picture. Play a trout properly, and you'll catch it. The faſcination of eaſe. p. 169

CHAP. XV.

The ſcene changed. A pleaſing proſpect ſuddenly overcaſt. An eaſy way to get rid of a wrangler, with a comfortable plaiſter for a broken head. He that throws dirt always fouls his fingers. p. 174

CHAP. XVI.

A receipt for popularity. Turn a caſt-horſe to graze on a common. The old ſteward acts the ſecond part

to the agent's farce. An hint by the bye. p. 179

CHAP. XVII.

An holiday, and a jolly day. A ſumptuous feaſt, and a raree-ſhew. p. 183

CHAP. XVIII.

" *Impreſſes quaint capariſons, and ſteeds;*
" *Baſes, and tinſel trappings; gorgeous knights,*
" *Then marſhall'd feaſt*
" *Serv'd up in hall, with ſewers and ſeneſchals.* p. 189

CHAP. XIX.

In what the great are eaſieſt to be imitated. This humble ambition more dangerous, if leſs ridiculous, in man than in woman. Another interview with a couple of old acquaintances. p. 196

CHAP. XX.

He that plays at BOWLS *muſt meet* RUBS. *The biter* DRUB'D. *An old fox caught napping. A penny ſaved is a penny got. Splendid œconomy; with the unfortunate candle adventure. A mortifying inſtance of the force of vanity.* p. 199

CHAP. XXI.

Intereſting hints, which ſet ſome matters much canvaſſed in a new light. p. 205

CHAP. XXII.

Diſputes will ariſe, where every man is for himſelf. A ſure method of removing ſcruples, and reconciling oppoſite opinions. The character of the GRAND COMPOUNDER *finiſhed. The concluſion* p. 209

THE

CONTENTS.

CHAP. XVII. p. 179

CHAP. XVIII. p. 185

CHAP. XIX. p. 189

CHAP. XX. p. 195

CHAP. XXI. p. 199

CHAP. XXII. p. 205

CHAP. XXIII. p. 209

TIE

THE REVERIE; OR, A Flight to the Paradiſe of Fools.

CHAP. I.

The ſcheme changes with the ſcene. A remarkable inſtance of military equity. The ſoldier's view in war. Every man for himſelf, the rule in war as well as peace.

THE feats of heroiſm, and the glory which, according to the general prejudices of mankind, I had been accuſtomed to aſſociate with the idea of war, made me promiſe myſelf much pleaſure from this change. The ſpirit read my ſentiments in my looks, and ſmiling expreſſively, "you are now going to take "a view of ſcenes, (ſaid he) the nature of which will "make your utmoſt care requiſite, to eſcape the il-"luſions which ſurround them on every ſide, and are "ſo ſtrong as to deceive the very actors of them. The "limitation of the human faculties makes it neceſſary, "that objects ſhould be preſented to you in a regular "ſucceſſion; as that general view which conveys

" knowledge intuitively to ſuperior beings, would on-
" ly dazzle your mind, and involve it in perplexity
" and confuſion. But this the more important duties
" of my office will not permit my attending to, at pre-
" ſent. I have already devoted as much time to your
" gratification as I can ſpare. You muſt therefore
" proceed alone, and make your own obſervations.
" For this reaſon it will be proper to place you im-
" mediately in the ſcene of action. Your attention
" will there be freed from the diſtraction of a more
" diſtant and complicated view; and you ſhall have
" other aſſiſtances, to remedy the inconvenience of my
" abſence." —— Saying this, he took my hand, and tranſported me, inſtantaneouſly, in the ſame manner as before, into the country which was the ſeat of the war.

High as my expectations had been, this nearer view of the paths of human glory chilled my ſoul. I turned my eyes away in horror; and in the inſtinctive impulſe of affright, moved cloſe to my guide for protection. " I have often cautioned you (reſumed he, in
" an accent of reproof) againſt forming your judge-
" ment of any thing too precipitately. But now you
" were delighted at the thought of this proſpect. In
" a moment, you ſicken at the ſight. Is this conſiſt-
" ent with the character of a rational being? Your
" preſent fears of danger to yourſelf are as idly ground-
" leſs, as your hopes of receiving pleaſure, from be-
" holding the miſeries of others, were then unjuſtifi-
" able. I have told you, that your form is imperceptible to human ſenſe. It is alſo impaſſive to the
" injuries which affect mortality, under all the weak-
" neſs and imperfections of which you ſee the beings
" before you labour, as ſtrongly as when in your
" world. You may therefore mix with the multitude
" without apprehenſion, and make your remarks on
" every thing that occurs, with deliberation and eaſe;
" to enable you to do which, I have freed your mind
" from the prejudices that have hitherto obſtructed
" your reaſon, ſo that you will now behold all things
" in their genuine colours; and as ſome knowledge of
" the paſt lives of the perſons concerned in the ſcenes

" you

" you are going to enter into, may occaſionally be ne-
" ceſſary to explain their preſent actions, your facul-
" ties are enlarged with a power of looking back, and
" reviewing the whole ſeries, as readily and diſtinct-
" ly as you do the objects recorded in your memory.
" Your motions alſo, as you are unincumbered with
" matter, depend abſolutely on your will, by a ſingle
" act of which you may tranſport yourſelf whither-
" ſoever you pleaſe in an inſtant; and ſo trace the
" moſt complicated tranſactions through all their in-
" tricate extent, from their obſcure cauſes, to their
" as unexpected concluſions, with preciſion and per-
" ſpicuity. A right uſe of theſe advantages will give
" your curioſity the moſt rational ſatisfaction. Nor
" are you confined to any particular ſcene. When
" your ſoul is ſurfeited with war, and ſickens at the
" thought of military glory, you are at liberty to ſeek
" new ſubjects of remark, through all the wide extent
" of human life, which is expanded to your view.
" One thing, though, I muſt caution you againſt, for-
" get not that you are a meer unconcerned ſpectator
" of all the events you behold; nor preſume on any
" account to interpoſe, be they ever ſo intereſting to
" you. The leaſt attempt of this kind will inſtantane-
" ouſly deprive you for ever of the indulgence you
" now enjoy. I am ſummoned hence. When it is
" proper to reconduct you to the world of man, I will
" attend. Till then, obſerve the caution I have given
" you, and proceed without farther limitation or re-
" ſtraint."—With theſe words he vaniſhed from my ſight.

The firſt emotions of my ſurprize at being left in ſuch a condition may be eaſily conceived. But they laſted not long. I ſoon felt the advantages of the favours beſtowed ſo liberally upon me; in the conſci-ouſneſs of which I loſt all fear, and directly prepared to avail myſelf of them, in the moſt extenſive manner. The more than martial animoſity with which this war appeared, by the deſolation of the country, and the miſeries of the inhabitants, to be carried on, made me conclude that it muſt have ariſen from ſome moſt important cauſe. To learn this I directly entered into the

army that lay neareſt to me, where I imagined I ſhould readily receive the information I wanted; judging that every individual muſt be acquainted with the motives for a war in which he hazarded his life, and of courſe they muſt be the ſubject of the general converſation.

The army was compoſed of mercenaries of different nations hired by a foreign power, whoſe own ſubjects made a conſiderable part of it, tho' under the ſupreme command of one of the former; and was led hither, into the country of an ally and friend, according to the rules of military equity, to defend the ſovereign's own dominions from the invaſion of an enemy, who with equal juſtice marched his forces to the indiſcriminate oppreſſion of friends and foes, through whoſe territories they paſſed, to wreak his vengeance on this part of his adverſary's ſubjects, for injuries he imagined he had received from another, who were ſuperior to his power, and with whom theſe had no connection in nature or intereſt, other than (in this caſe) the misfortune of being under the government of the ſame ſovereign.

This general account I ſoon learned, and ſaw abundantly confirmed, both by the appearance of the army, and the manner of its proceeding; but of the real origin of the war, or the end propoſed by it, except *plunder* and *pay*, the ſoldiers appeared utterly ignorant, and indeed unconcerned about them, plodding mechanically to the field to fight, with as much indifference as oxen do to plough.

Shocked at an inſenſibility ſo diſgraceful to beings who boaſt of the bleſſing of reaſon, I advanced to the commander, from whom I hoped to learn ſomething ſatisfactory, in matters ſo immediately conducted by himſelf. He was ſitting in his tent, at a table covered with diſpatches he had juſt received from the court by which he was employed. When he had looked them over, with evident phlegm, and diſregard. "Theſe "people (ſaid he) muſt think me as great a fool as "themſelves, to ſend me ſuch orders; orders which "common ſenſe might inform them I will not obey. "The people are out of humour, forſooth, at the "length and expence of the war; and ſo their wiſe "maſters want me to puſh it with more vigour, to bring

" bring it to a concluſion. But they will find them-
" ſelves miſtaken, I promiſe them. No! no! I will
" have no general actions; nothing that can poſſibly
" be deciſive either way. That is not my buſineſs.
" The profits of my command are too conſiderable to
" be thrown away in that manner. If I ſhould be
" beaten, they will inſtantly chuſe another general,
" without ever conſidering that I only obeyed their
" own orders. And if I obtain a compleat victory,
" the war is at an end; and of courſe my profit alſo.
" No! No! I will have no deciſive actions. While
" they are maſters of a ducat to pay me, I will pro-
" tract the war. When their money is all ſpent,
" they may go to battle as ſoon as they will; and
" whether they win or loſe, is a matter of indifference
" to me. In the mean time, they ſhall have march-
" ing, and ſkirmiſhing enough, to ſatisfy their paſſion
" for fighting, and prevent their complaining of idle-
" neſs. I am commander in chief; and while I am,
" I will do juſt what I pleaſe, which is to promote
" my own intereſt as much as I poſſibly can. If I can
" manage matters ſo, as to hold my poſt for two or
" three campaigns more, I ſhall get money enough to
" ſupport the dignity of my illuſtrious houſe with pro-
" per ſplendour. Nor is it poſſible for them to de-
" tect my deſign. The diſproportion in numbers be-
" tween my army and that of the enemy, is ſuch as
" ſufficiently juſtifies my cautious conduct; at the
" ſame time, that the difference in the appointments
" and goodneſs of the men ſecures me from danger
" of diſgrace, and makes the glory I acquire in this
" defenſive war cheaply earned. Indeed the greateſt
" difficulty often is to divide their force, and direct
" their ardour in ſuch a manner, as to prevent their
" defeating their enemies totally, againſt all diſadvan-
" tages, and contrary to my intentions."

CHAP. II.

A gilded bait to catch a gudgeon. The beſt cure for a matrimonial ſurfeit; with a new motive for entering into the military life.

HAVING finiſhed his meditations, he went out to a number of his officers, who attended at the entrance of his tent. His behaviour on this occaſion ſhewed the maſterly addreſs with which he purſued is private ſcheme. To his own countrymen he ſpoke with the utmoſt indifference; and giving them ſome general orders about the duties of the camp, diſmiſſed them ſlightly, and with an appearance of diſeſteem. But to the foreigners by whoſe ſovereign he was employed, he carried himſelf in quite a different manner. His eye wore a ſmile of familiarity and complaiſance, whenever it met the meaneſt ſubaltern of the corps; and he ſcrupled not to compliment them, at the expence of the reſt of the army, by propoſing their example to general imitation.

So flattering a preference had the deſigned effect; the fatigues and dangers by which they acquired it were immediately forgot; and they even appeared eager to undertake more, to ſupport ſo diſtinguiſhed an honour.

The general ſaw with ſecret pleaſure the ardour with which he had enflamed them; and reſolved he would not let it cool for want of employment. Advancing to their particular commander, who juſt then joined him, "My dear friend (ſaid he, with an air of "the moſt cordial eſteem) I have this moment receiv-"ed ſome intelligence, that enables me to give your "brave countrymen an opportunity of ſignalizing that "valour which has eſtabliſhed them in the exalted re-"putation of being the beſt ſoldiers in the univerſe. "You will ſelect five thouſand whom you think moſt "proper, and let them be ready to march an hour be-"fore night. When you return from doing that, we will "concert our meaſures, and fix on a perſon to carry "them into execution. It is a maſter-ſtroke, and will

"do

" do honour to any officer; for I cannot doubt of the " ſucceſs of an enterprize undertaken by your gallant " countrymen."

The officer, who free from deceit himſelf, ſuſpected none in any body elſe, heard him with the higheſt joy, and glowing with a paſſion for glory, which the general thus artfully fann'd, reſolved, without even waiting to know the nature of the attempt, to take the command himſelf, and ſo reap all the honour. " Your " Highneſs (anſwered he with evident emotion) does " them honour by all your commands. I ſhall not have " any occaſion for ſelecting, where all are equally " good, and equally ambitious of meriting your ap- " probation. As for an officer for the command, I " believe I can find one to whom, I hope, your High- " neſs will have no objection."

Saying this, he proceeded directly to get every thing ready, while the reſt of the army, inſtead of being offended at having the poſt of honour thus partially given from them, hugged themſelves in the eaſe and ſafety they enjoyed by the diſgrace.

There was ſomething ſo ſtriking in the readineſs with which the officer catched at the bait that was laid for him, that I became ſome-how anxious for the event, and reſolved to obſerve him particularly through the affair; and therefore followed him, when he went to give the neceſſary orders to his men.

If I had been ſurprized at the ardour he ſhewed, I was infinitely more ſo, to find that the ſame ſpirit ran through all his countrymen; the very private ſoldiers, whoſe ſtation might have been ſuppoſed to exempt them from the enthuſiaſtic notions of honour which idleneſs and affluence inſpire in the more exalted ranks, to ſuch a degree as to make men break through the firſt law of nature, to run into danger with delight, *turning out* to a man, at the firſt mention of the matter; and vying with each other who ſhould be of the party; though the appearance of many of them ſhewed that they were already exhauſted by fatigue, and wanted reſt and refreſhment, to reſtore their ſtrength to any degree of equality with their ſpirit.

Among men actuated by ſuch an emulation, the leaſt preference muſt have bred envy, and been attended with diſagreeable conſequences. Senſible of this, the officer thanked them all, in the moſt engaging manner for their readineſs; but ſaid, that, according to the indiſpenſable rule of military diſcipline, he muſt neceſſarily take thoſe whoſe duty came in turn, conſoling the reſt with the thought that they could not long want an opportunity equally glorious of proving their ſpirit in an army, where they were honoured by the general, with ſo peculiar a preheminence.

This delicate affair being adjuſted, the heroes whoſe happy fortune it was to go prepared themſelves with the higheſt emulation, while the others drew off in evident dejection at their diſappointment.

As their leader rode along the lines, to take a particular view of them, I obſerved that he addreſſed one of his ſubalterns, and was anſwered by him in a ſtrain of familiarity, that ſeemed inconſiſtent with the diſtance between their ſtations. "Well, *Tom*, (ſaid the "former with a ſmile) this is a ſudden call. How "will *Venus* bear to have her *Mars* torn from her "arms ſo ſoon? She ought to have a little longer "time to reconcile her to the military life, before ſhe "is left by herſelf in a camp."

——"In a camp! No! no! I ſhall hardly leave "her in a camp."

——"No! What then do you deſign to do with "her?"

——"Why? ſend her to indulge her meditations "with her old friend, *Will Buck*'s Lady. It will be "good entertainment for them to compare notes."

——"But if you did not mean to keep her here, "why were you at the trouble of bringing her? I "imagined it was becauſe you did not know how to "part with her."

——"How to part with her! I thought you knew "me better than to think ſo. Why, man, the very "contrary was the reaſon. If I did not deſire to part "with her, what ſhould make me bring her here? "No! No! It is not come to that with me yet. I "turned ſoldier, at firſt, merely to get rid of my

"wife;

" wife; and I hope I may be allowed to take the ſame " method to get rid of my miſtreſs too, when I am " equally tired of her. Beſide, I have a better plea " now than I had before. My honour, man! My " honour is engaged. I muſt not quit my colours up- " on any account, at ſuch a time as this. If the fond " charmer ſhould take pet, and go home to her friends " with her finger in her eye, to be revenged on her " ſwain for his indifference, ſhe has my ſincere con- " ſent; nor ſhall my beſt aſſiſtance be wanting to make " an honeſt woman of her, by getting her a good " huſband. She has examples enough to keep her in " countenance. But if the conſtant dove will not de- " ſert her roving mate, why, faith, I do not well know " how to ſend her back againſt her will; and muſt in " compaſſion pay her a viſit now and then; though, " by the bye, it ſhall be as ſeldom as poſſible, to give " her company ſomething like novelty; which, in my " opinion, is the only thing that can make the com- " pany of any woman tolerable."

——" But, won't this be breaking faith with her? " I preſume you muſt have made her many fine pro- " miſes of love and conſtancy, before you could bring " her to take ſuch a ſtep?"

——" Promiſes! Aye, promiſes enough for the " matter of that; but ſhe was a fool if ſhe believed " them, when ſhe had a proof that I ſhould not keep " them, before her eyes. She could not be ſo blindly " vain, as not to know that novelty was the only ad- " vantage ſhe had over my wife, whom I may proba- " bly return to by and by, for the ſame reaſon, when " a campaign or two ſhall have ſharpened my appetite. " A campaign is the beſt remedy in nature for a ma- " trimonial ſurfeit. It cures a man's qualms, and " ſends him home as keen as a country-bridegroom."

——" But, are you ſure that ſhe will leave you ſo " readily? The ſame ſpirit that enabled her to come " to ſuch a place as this, may diſpute your authority " to ſend her back. She has paid a dear price for " your company, and may not chuſe to give it up. " Women when once they love have much more con- " ſtancy in their temper than men."

——" Conſtancy! Say rather, obſtinacy. But I " have taken care of that matter. I have wrote a let- " ter to my wife, in which I made profeſſions of the " higheſt eſteem, and deſired the favour of her com- " pany, to compleat my happineſs; promiſing, that " *Chloe* and I would ſtudy her ſatisfaction and pleaſure " in every inſtance."

——" Good Heavens! What could you propoſe " by that? You could never think ſhe would be mean, " or mad enough to accept of ſuch an invitation; an " invitation, that only added inſult to the ill-treat- " ment you had given her before."

——" Accept of it! No, I neither expected nor " deſired that. I had ſchemes of a very different kind " in view. I know you have never ſuſpected me for " forming any deep deſigns; but this will convince " you of the contrary. This letter, little as you think " of it, will ſerve two very important purpoſes. It " will prevent my wife from obtaining a ſeparate " maintenance out of my eſtate; for, as it is her du- " ty to follow me wherever I pleaſe, ſhe cannot now " pretend that I have abandoned her: and, on the o- " ther hand, it gives me an opportunity, at this, and " any other time, to get rid of my miſtreſs's company, " by telling her, that my invitation is accepted; for " ſhe would fly to the extremity of the globe rather " than meet her. He! What think you now? Am " not I a good politician? Egad, I always miſtook my " talents; if I had applied myſelf in time, I might " have been prime miniſter before now. Ha! ha! ha!

——" If you were conſcious of this inconſtancy " in your temper, how came you to marry? That " ſhould have been the laſt thing I would have done."

——" That is very true. But Sir *John Brute*'s rea- " ſon was mine. I wanted to go to bed to her, and " ſhe would not conſent on any other terms: the con- " ſequence of which was, that when my end was ob- " tained, I grew tired of my bargain and ſo turned " ſoldier to get quit of it."

——" I am ſurpriſed to hear you ſay this. I al- " ways underſtood that you had other motives for

" your

" your military turn; an ambition of command, and " thirſt for glory."

——" Very true. Glory and command are pretty " things, to be ſure; but they are not equally the " paſſion of all people. Your good luck in loſing " your wife, made me hope that my turtle would " have broken her heart, in the ſame manner; but " ſhe was not ſo obliging; and therefore I have tried " this method of preferring another publickly to her. " I know the force of female vanity; and if this ſcheme " ſhould luckily ſucceed, I'll give up my hopes of a " truncheon, and retire as *Scipio* and other great men " have done. If I once get my neck out of the yoke, " I'll take care how I thruſt it in again, or even enter " into any connection that I cannot break when I " pleaſe, without being obliged to have recourſe to " this expedient. No! No! I am not quite ſo fond " of glory as you are. I can be content at home; " that is, when I am maſter of my own houſe."

——" Is it poſſible that you can be ſerious? This " is ſo contrary to the opinion of all your friends, that " I muſt believe you only jeſt. Your birth and for- " tune give you a title to the higheſt employments in " the ſtate, in whatever capacity you choſe to apply " yourſelf; and we all thought that prefering the mi- " litary, as the moſt honourable, you had come hither " to qualify yourſelf for them."

——" Aye! as you have done! And pray, what " are you the better? In reward of all your fatigues " and dangers, you have the honour to be put under " the command of a foreigner, who would not preſume " to put himſelf upon a level with you in any other " light; and laughs at you in his ſleeve, for your con- " deſcenſion. Very fine encouragement, truly! No! " No! Let the poor fight for pay, you and I want " it not; and all the real advantages of honour our " anceſtors, bleſſings on their memory for their pains, " have tranſmitted to us. Let us then enjoy the hap- " pineſs that is in our poſſeſſion, and not loſe the ſub- " ſtance thus to graſp at the ſhadow."

The other, who had liſtened to him before with contempt, was ſo ſtruck with the latter port of his diſcourſe,

diſcourſe, that he rode away abruptly to avoid hearing any more of it.

CHAP. III.

A toilet ſet out in a new taſte. The advantage of knowing how to play one inconvenience againſt another; with an intereſting inſtance of love and honour in the modern ſtyle.

THIS extraordinary converſation raiſing my curioſity to ſee the fair female who had originally been the ſubject of it, I followed her lover, while his leader was preparing for his expedition.

She was ſitting alone in his tent, in a ſituation not eaſy to be deſcribed. Educated in the lap of luxury, ſhe had multiplied the wants of nature ten-thouſand-fold; and required aſſiſtance every moment for neceſſities created by caprice. Though her lover's fortune placed her above the real diſtreſſes of ſuch a place, and ſupplied her with moſt of the conveniences, as well as all the neceſſaries of life, ſhe had numberleſs artificial occaſions, which habit had made in a manner indiſpenſible to her, and which, as it was impoſſible to provide for then, in ſuch a vague unſettled ſtate, ſhe exerted as much contrivance to ſupply, as had firſt enabled human ingenuity to find out the moſt important conveniencies of life; though with this eſſential difference, that as the end was fantaſtic here, the means neceſſarily appeared ridiculous.

We found her at her toilet, which was a ſumpter-trunk, ſet upon one end, and covered with a foul ſhirt. On this ſhe had placed a pocket-mirrour, and on each ſide of that a row of phials, and gallipots filled with colours, coſmetic paſte and waſhes which ſhe always carried about her. Her combs and bruſhes were ſet out on the ſaucers ſhe had juſt been uſing at breakfaſt. Her ſhoes and ſtockings lay on the bed, which was alſo her ſeat; and to waſh herſelf ſhe made uſe of an utenſil, which had been placed under it for another occaſion. With this apparatus, all ſet in form, ſhe

was

was as attentively buſy at the important work of dreſſing, as if ſhe was going to make her appearance at a drawing-room. Her lover's entrance interrupted her. "Fie, *Damon*, (ſaid ſhe bluſhing at the ridiculous "figure ſhe made) how can you intrude ſo rudely into "a lady's ruelle? You ſee I have ſet out my toilet. "The bed and the trunk ſerve for every thing. "Dumb waiters are ſometimes moſt convenient; hah! "hah! hah!

The moment I ſaw her, I could perceive that this gaiety was all affected; that, ſick at heart, ſhe flew to levity for relief from the torture of reflection. Such a ruin was ſufficient to raiſe compaſſion in any mind not utterly loſt to every ſenſe of humanity, as well as virtue. She was juſt entered into the prime of life; her form elegant and ſtriking; and her features, if not faultleſsly beautiful, yet glowing with ſuch luxuriant health, ſuch animated ſenſibility, as had the effect of the moſt perfect beauty. But in her preſent ſituation, all theſe charms appeared to diſadvantage. A gloom of conſcious guilt overcaſt her ſmiles; and amidſt all her mirth and endearments, ſhe was aſhamed to look up, and meet the eye of the very author of her ſhame.

When ſhe had forced out the laugh with which ſhe concluded the above ſpeech, her *Damon*, ſmiling with an air of indifference, "Neceſſity is the mother of in-"vention, my dear *Chloe*; (ſaid he) and yours ſeems "to have been well ſet to work. But I come to tell "you ſome news that I fear will interrupt you. I am "ordered out upon action directly; and as it like to be "a warm affair, I think it is better to provide for your "ſafety before I go, for fear of any thing's happening "to me. You would be horridly at a loſs by your-"ſelf, in ſuch a place as this, if I ſhould be killed."

She ſtarted at the mention of action; but his laſt words ſtruck her with terrors too ſtrong for her to bear. For ſome moments ſhe ſtood like the ſtatue of horror, unable to move or ſpeak; but her very fears at length gave her utterance. "Good heaven! (ex-"claimed ſhe) What do you mean? What action can "you be ordered into that ſhould endanger your life?

Did

" Did not you promiſe me, that you would quit this " accurſed life directly? Did you not prevail upon " me to come here with you, only that you might " lay down your commiſſion without diſrepute? You " cannot, ſhall not, think of going into any action! " You muſt come away this moment."

——" That was my deſign, my dear, if it had not " been for this unlucky affair; but now it is impoſſible " for me to ſtir. If I return, I will that moment lay " down; but I cannot poſſibly do it ſooner. It would " be an eternal blot upon my honour."

——" Honour! (returned ſhe, with a ſigh, that " ſeemed to burſt her heart) How can you mention " that word to me? If you are reſolved to go I will " wait the event here. Should you be brought back " wounded, my care may not be unneceſſary! If " worſe ſhould happen, the horrors I ſhall ſuffer till " I receive the account, will compleat my averſion " to life, and make me glad to follow you. I have " now no buſineſs in this world without you."

The agony in which ſhe ſaid this would have melted any other heart; but he felt it not. Finding her proof to this argument, he therefore had recourſe to his laſt expedient. " I am much obliged to you, my " dear, (ſaid he, quite unmoved) for your kind inten- " tions to take care of me; but I hope I ſhall not " want it. Beſide there is another thing, which em- " baraſſes me a good deal. I have juſt received an " account, that my wife, out of her exemplary love " and duty, has accepted my invitation, and is com- " ing to us directly."

——" To us! (anſwered ſhe, alarmed almoſt to " diſtraction) Is it is poſſible? What ſhall we do? " Where ſhall I fly! I never can, never will ſee her. " I had rather die ten thouſand deaths than look her " in the face."

——" To be ſure, I allow it muſt be rather auk- " ward; but the miſchief is I cannot tell how you " will avoid it, if you ſtay here."

——" You muſt write to her peremptorily, this " moment not to come; and when you leave this

" place,

" place, take a different route from what you intend-
" ed, for fear ſhe ſhould not obey you."

—" Aye! but the worſt is, I don't know where
" to direct to her. She ſet out immediately, on re-
" ceipt of my letter; and as the poſt is obliged to
" come ſo far about, for fear of being intercepted by
" the enemy, and ſhe travels with paſſports the ſhort-
" eſt way, ſhe may be here this evening, for aught I
" know: and then it would be ſo groſs an abuſe not
" to ſee her, even after her undergoing the fatigue of
" ſuch a journey, at my expreſs deſire, that I can-
" not avoid waiting for her. Decency at leaſt muſt be
" obſerved."

—" Decency! How can you inſult me by menti-
" oning ſuch a word? I ſlighted that, and every thing
" elſe, for you. Had I paid any regard to decency,
" I ſhould not have been here now in this condition."

—" Nay, for the matter of that, my dear, I am
" not much behind you. I ſhewed as little reſpect to
" thoſe things for your ſake as you could for mine.
" But let us not enter into fruitleſs diſputes. What
" are you reſolved to do? for I muſt march within
" this hour."

—" Honour! decency! But I am juſtly ſerved.
" What am I reſolved to do! Say rather what you
" intend to do with me, and do not torture me any
" longer in this manner; for I ſee plainly enough, that
" my preſence is a pain, which you want to get rid
" of at any rate. Honour! juſt heaven!"

—" Why, child, if you are determined to think
" ſo, it is in vain to reaſon with you. You ſhall do
" juſt as you pleaſe; either go or ſtay. What I meant
" to propoſe was this: You remember your old friend,
" who took a frolick with *Will. Buck* two or three
" years ago. She lives in a very pretty retired man-
" ner, in a neutral town, about twenty miles from
" hence. Now, if you approve of it, it would be
" no bad ſcheme for you, to go and pay her a viſit,
" till we ſee how things go. I am ſure ſhe will be
" very well pleaſed to ſee you; and there you will be
" free from the inconveniencies, and ſafe from the
" dangers of a camp; and near enough for me to ſtep

" to

" to you as often as I can ſpare a moment. I'll write " a letter to *Will* about it directly; and as I know his " finances are not in the beſt ſituation, I make no " doubt but he'll be very glad of your ſtaying there " as long as you pleaſe; for you ſhall have money e- " nough to bear all the expence. I would not let " you be under obligation to any one. Well, what " think you of my ſcheme? Was it not a lucky " thought? You and ſhe were very intimate formerly, " and will now be the moſt proper and agreeable com- " panions for each other."

It is impoſſible to deſcribe the different paſſions which were painted in her face, while he was making this propoſal. She knew him too well to take ſuch a rational ſcheme for a ſudden thought; and concluded from thence, that he was ſatiated with her company, and had formed a premeditated deſign to get rid of her; to facilitate which he had firſt made a pretence of his being ordered into action, and when that did not take effect, forged this ſtory of his wife's coming; for notwithſtanding her diſtreſs, ſhe had obſerved the many inconſiſtencies in what he ſaid. However, her pride would not permit her to diſcover her ſuſpicions, as it would look like ſtriving to force herſelf longer upon him.

" When you are reſolved, (anſwered ſhe, with a moſt " expreſſive look) I have nothing left but to obey. " Give orders for my going, I ſhall ſoon be ready. " All places are indifferent to me, and all companions " equally diſagreeable. My own thoughts will afford " me company enough. I leave you to yours."

—— " My deareſt girl, (replied he, more pleaſed " at her compliance than affected at the manner of it) " what I propoſe is for the beſt. I only ſtudy your " convenience and ſatisfaction. If you can think of " any other way, I am ready to do it."

—— " I have no power to think! I wiſh I never " could! But let me be gone. I have ſtaid too long " already. Let me not interfere with your regard to " decency and honour." ——— Saying this, ſhe direct- ly huddled on her travelling habit, while he went to order his chaiſe to the door of his tent.

When

When he had done this he returned to give her ſome neceſſary inſtructions for her journey, and palliate the offence he had given her, by careſſes and profeſſions of love and conſtancy. She heard him with the moſt contemptuous ſilence; and taking a purſe of gold, which he gave her, with an air of indignation flung into the chaiſe the moment it arrived, without ſpeaking a word, or making the leaſt return to his fondneſs.

The ſpirit which ſhe ſhewed on this occaſion was evidently raiſed by reſentment; and of courſe could not laſt long. Indeed ſhe was ſcarce able to ſupport it till ſhe got into the chaiſe, where ſhe melted into a flood of tears before ſhe was out of ſight. Her lover ſaw her diſtreſs; but the joy he felt at being freed from her company, prevented his feeling any concern at it. He ſhrugged up his ſhoulders in ſelf-complacency; and, hugging himſelf on his deliverance, prepared to attend his commander at the appointed hour.

CHAP. IV.

War! Horrid war! They'll never want employment who think themſelves well paid for their pains with a mouthful of moon-ſhine. The great channel of ſecret intelligence.

THERE was ſomething ſo deliberately baſe in the whole conduct of this perſon, that I left him with the higheſt contempt, and returned to his commander, who was by this time ready to wait upon the general to receive his orders.

The moment he entered the tent, the general aroſe, and, diſmiſſing every other perſon preſent, received him with the higheſt reſpect. "Well, my friend, "(ſaid he) I am now ready to communicate to you "the plan which I have formed; but it will be pro-"per that the perſon for whom you deſign the ho-"nour of the command, ſhould be preſent."

—"He is preſent, if your highneſs makes no ob-"jection to him. I know that all your plans are

"formed

" formed with judgment; and as your more than uſu-
" al earneſtneſs about this ſhews it to be of impor-
" tance, ſhall be proud of having the execution of it
" entruſted to my care."

— " You, my friend! I know not what to ſay;
" I cannot ſpare you from my ſide. I want your ad-
" vice every moment. At the ſame time, I am un-
" willing to rob you of an opportunity of acquiring ſo
" much glory. Here is the intelligence I have re-
" ceived, and here is the ſcheme I laid down up-
" on it. You will examine them, and alter any thing
" you don't approve, as circumſtances may require.
" To you I give a diſcretionary power, to act as you
" ſee proper. Had I known you would have gone, I
" I ſhould not have drawn any particular directions.
" Go; and ſucceſs await you."

The other received this diſtinguiſhed mark of confidence and favour with the higheſt pleaſure; and, taking leave of the general, haſtened away to join his troops, who were by this time drawn out ready to march. As ſoon as he had taken a view of them, he opened his inſtructions; and looking them over, put himſelf at the head of his men, with whom he marched all night, through woods and moraſſes deemed impaſſible, and at day-break found himſelf juſt before a quarter of the enemy, who confiding in the diſtance and natural ſtrength of their ſituation, had neglected to fortify themſelves, and expected nothing leſs than to be attacked.

The difficulties of the march had fatigued his troops to ſuch a degree, that it appeared next to madneſs to let them attack an enemy greatly ſuperior to them in number. But their ardour was ſuch, that they deſpiſed every advantage, and demanded to be inſtantly led on. The proper improvement of that enthuſiaſm is generally deciſive. The commander therefore indulged their impetuoſity, confiding in their valour; and convinced that his ſafety and ſucceſs equally depended upon ſurprize, if he failed of which, it would be abſolutely impoſſible for him even to make a retreat in the condition they were in, through ſuch difficulties as they had ſtruggled with in coming.

Scenes

Scenes like this are impoſſible to be particularly deſcribed. Accuſtomed to conquer they made their onſet with a reſolution that bore down all before them. In the confuſion unavoidable on ſuch occaſions, their enemies fled at the firſt impulſe, imagining they were attacked by the whole army, while the victors made an heavy ſlaughter of all who had no time to eſcape.

Had they ſtopped here, the advantage would have been important. But hurried on by their natural ardour, and fluſhed beſide with ſucceſs, they purſued the fugitives, who by this time had recovered from their firſt ſurprize, and formed upon an eminence, not very far from their late camp. The action now was really dreadful. The aſſailants were ſeveral times repulſed with ſevere loſs, and owed their ſucceſs at laſt to an effort of meer deſpair, being determined, to a man, to die rather than have their victory ſnatched thus out of their hands.

Their loſs in this affair equalled that of their enemies, in the ſurprize of their entrenchments, and amounted to more than half their number; but they remained maſters of the field, the honour of which they looked upon as a recompence for all.

On their return to the army the general met them, and embracing the leader, congratulated him on the glory of his victory; and *thanking* the men, in the orders of the day, ſent them away happy; while he pleaſed himſelf with the ſucceſs of his ſcheme, which gave him the appearance of doing ſomething, flattered his employers with imaginary advantages, and raiſed his merit with them; at the ſame time, that in reality it ſerved rather to protract than determine the war, by in piring each party with a deſire of revenging ſo equal a loſs. However it was deemed ſufficient by him to be made the ſubject of congratulatory meſſages to the ſovereign under whom he ſerved, and all the powers confederate with him.

I was ſo ſick of this mercenary method of making war, by which the miſeries of that ſcourge of mankind were ſo highly aggravated, that I reſolved to quit this army directly, and ſee whether that of the enemy,

my, oppoſed to it, was conducted in a more rational manner.

I have ſaid that my guide had given me power to tranſport myſelf, by a bare act of my will, wherever I pleaſed. Though this was neceſſarily a great advantage in many inſtances, there were yet ſome circumſtances attending it, which made me chuſe to decline making uſe of it, except upon extraordinary occaſions. The inſtantaneous tranſition from one ſcene to another, diſtant and unconnected, was ſo unuſual to me, that it left a chaſm in my mind, and made me for ſome time at a loſs to comprehend the things before me, for want of the introduction of entering gradually into them. This I had experienced more than once, when at any time my guide uſed to turn my eye ſuddenly and without ſome previous preparation, to any new ſcene in the review I made under his immediate direction. For this reaſon I reſolved, when it was poſſible, to take the opportunity of accompanying ſome perſon, wherever I had a mind to go, whoſe buſineſs would ſerve as a clue, to introduce and direct me without perplexity or confuſion; by which method I had alſo the advantage of obſerving ſeveral things worthy of notice, in the countries through which I paſſed, which would have eſcaped me had I only flew over them in the other way.

For ſuch a guide and companion I was not long at a loſs. The general that very evening held a council of war, the reſolutions of which two of the members could not refrain from talking over that night, after ſupper. Not ſuſpecting that they were overheard, they canvaſſed all that had paſſed very freely, and in the courſe of their converſation mentioned ſeveral matters of the greateſt importance to be kept ſecret. This the valet de chambre of him in whoſe tent they were was not inattentive to. He was a native of the enemy's country, and retained by them to procure intelligence, of every thing that happened in the army where he was. Accordingly he placed himſelf where he could diſtinctly hear all that was ſaid; and pretending ſleep, to avoid the danger of detection, liſtened to their diſcourſe with the greateſt attention.

As

As ſoon as they ſeparated, and he had put his maſter to bed, he wrote an exact account of all that he had overheard; and giving his letter to one of his aſſociates, who paſſed for no more than a common purveyor to the camp, charged him to deliver it as directed with the utmoſt expedition, as it was of the higheſt importance; and this experienced perſon I reſolved to accompany.

CHAP. V.

The longeſt way about is often the neareſt way home. The pleaſure of comparing notes creates friendſhip in affliction. A new ſpecies of knight-errantry.

THE armies lay ſo near each other that my guide might ſoon have performed his errand, could he have gone directly with ſafety. Inſtead of that, to avoid every ſuſpicion, he took diametrically the contrary way, deſigning, when he ſhould be out of danger of being obſerved to make a turn, and go by a ſafer though more diſtant courſe.

I ſhall not attempt to deſcribe the country through which we travelled. Could the moſt ambitious power that ever waged war view ſuch a ſcene with the diſpaſſionate eye of reaſon but for one moment, it would ſtrike his heart with horror, and make him deſiſt from purſuits ſo deſtructive to his kind.

The firſt place we ſtopped at happened to be the town to which the officer had ſent his miſtreſs, as I have ſaid before, under a pretext of her avoiding his wife. I ſhould have taken notice, that in the courſe of the action he had often repented of not taking her advice, and wiſhed himſelf to be in ſafety with her; though when it was over, his heart exulted ſo much in the ſucceſs, that for ſome time he could think of nothing but war and glory. Indeed his behaviour had been ſuch as in a great meaſure recovered the eſteem of his leader; and with the reſt of the army, who have a partiality for the indulgence of paſſion and are particularly

ticularly ſmitten with the more ſhewy virtues, totally obliterated his reproach.

As we entered the town, I accidentally ſaw her at a window, and my fellow traveller ſtopping for refreſhment, I took that opportunity to ſee how ſhe liked her preſent ſituation. When I joined her, ſhe and her friend were going to take a walk in their garden.

There was ſomething particularly ſtriking in the appearance of the latter. Tho' ſhe had never been a regular beauty, and now had loſt a good deal of the bloom of youth, it was impoſſible for man to behold her without deſire; at the ſame time, that the fire which flaſhed from her eyes ſhewed that ſhe felt all the paſſions ſhe inſpired. A ſimilarity in their circumſtances had very ſoon improved their former acquaintance into that degree of intimacy which is commonly called friendſhip. When they were ſeated in an arbour at the bottom of the garden, " I wonder, madam, " (ſaid the lady of the houſe) that you have had no " account from your friend, ſince this action. Public " report ſays it was very warm; but as no particular " mention is made of him, it is certain he has come off " ſafe. Officers of his rank are never overlooked."

" Indeed, madam, (anſwered the other) I know " not what to attribute it to but the levity that " rules all his actions. I am out of his ſight and conſequently out of his mind. But I have no right to " complain. I deſerve it all and more, for being ſuch " a dupe to my own vanity and his baſe deſigns, as " to think I could fix one whoſe ſoul is inconſtancy " itſelf. My eyes are at length opened to my folly. " I deſerve to be ſlighted thus and deſerted in a ſtrange " place."

—— " have patience, dear madam! Do not ſeek " for imaginary grievances. It is impoſſible he can deſert you. No man can be ſo inſenſible as to ſlight " ſuch charms. The hurry of war is above our conception, and often prevents the performance of the " duties deareſt to the heart."

—— " O my friend! you are too good to ſeek conſolation for a wretch juſt ſinking into deſpair. But " it is all in vain. What buſineſs had he with war?

" His

" His fortune placed him above the common motive " of neceſſity; and he aſſured me that he was ſick of " the folly of ambition, and would retire to ſome pri- " vate place in Italy, where we ſhould be unknown, " and there dedicate his life to love and happineſs. " But no ſooner had he obtained his baſe ends than he " changed his ſcheme; and feigning I know not what " reaſons about laying down his commiſſion with cre- " dit, and ſuch idle ſtuff, he led me hither, juſt to " ſhew me about, and make the ſhame of my being " caſt off the more notorious and mortifying, perhaps " to enhance its merit, and prepare the way for a re- " conciliation with his wife, which his writing her " that letter gives me ſufficient ground to think he is " not without thoughts of."

—" For ſhame, dear madam! ſummon up your " reſolution, and do not torture yourſelf with ſuch " vain, ſuch impoſſible apprehenſions. I know your " good ſenſe, and would not flatter you. A recon- " ciliation with his wife is an abſurd thought. Not " that I think it at all improbable, on her part. The " ſoft nature of our ſex can forgive any thing; but " the difficulty lies in himſelf. After giving her ſuch " treatment, he can never forgive her, can never " believe ſhe is ſincerely reconciled; and therefore " will hate her for her hypocriſy, and be always in " fear of ſome ſecret revenge. Or, even if ſhe ſhould " convince him to the contrary, the contraſt be- " tween her conduct and his, will be ſo mortifying to " him, and give her ſuch a ſuperiority in his own " eyes, that he will never be able to bear it; and " muſt avoid her preſence, to preſerve his own peace. " This, my dear, is your ſecurity againſt this worſt " misfortune poſſible to happen to a woman. Shame, " poverty, any thing, were preferable to being ſlight- " ed for a wife."

——" What an infatuated creature was I to bring " myſelf into this ſtate, that my happineſs muſt de- " pend on ſuch a baſe foundation? Happineſs, did I " ſay? It is miſery; the ſevereſt miſery. The con- " ſtant anxiety and fears inſeparable from ſuch a ſtate " of uncertainty, are worſe than any actual misfor-

" tune.

" tune. But I deſerve it all. I am inexcuſable in the " eyes of the world, and odious in my own. But " what will not the baſeneſs of man and the folly of " woman do?"

— " The baſe artifices of man to obtain his ends, " and his ſhameleſs perfidy after, ſhould be a warn- " ing to our ſex; but *Nature is nature, let the wiſe* " *ſay what they will*; and while woman has vanity and " deſires, man will take advantage of the former, to " flatter her into the gratification of the latter. You " have this conſolation, however, that your caſe is " not ſingular. I do not ſay example juſtifies a wrong " action; but ſtill it certainly is a ſatisfaction to " think, that others have fallen into as great errors as " ourſelves; that we are not the worſt of our kind. " All the folly that you upbraid yourſelf for have I " been guilty of, and with this ſevere aggravation, " that the perſon for whom I made ſuch a ſacrifice " was not in circumſtances even to delude me with the " romantic ſchemes of happineſs, which helped to " turn your head, but was forced by neceſſity to ap- " ply himſelf to the horrid trade of war for ſubſiſtence; " ſo that the pain of his abſence, and the fear of " loſing him, were heightened by the dreadful appre- " henſion of being reduced to dependence on the " friends, whoſe reſentment I had ſo juſtly provoked, " if any thing ſhould happen to him. Yet all this " have time and reflection reconciled me to, and " taught me to ſubmit without regret to a fate which " I can't remedy.

" But let us drop this diſagreeable and fruitleſs ſub- " ject. My intercourſe with my native country is ſo " little, that I had not even heard of your affair till " my friend ſent me the pleaſing account of the ho- " nour deſigned me by your company; and then with- " out any particular circumſtances, which he either " was unacquainted with, or had not time to write. " As I imagine there muſt be ſomething uncommon " and intereſting in them, I ſhall eſteem it a favour, " if you will indulge me with the relation; and to " encourage that confidence, I will candidly inform " you of every thing concerning myſelf, the account

" of

" of which, I know, has been greatly and moſt cru-
" elly miſrepreſented; and if you do not find much
" entertainment in it, you certainly will ample conſola-
" tion, from a compariſon of my caſe with yours. Not
" that all my adventures have been barren of matter
" for the former alſo, now that the danger and ridi-
" dicule which attended them at the time are over.

" You ſeem ſurpriſed, my dear, at my mentioning
" my adventures; but ours is literally a life of adven-
" ture; and the moment a woman takes the ſtep that
" we have done, ſhe as it were commences knight-er-
" rant, and ſallies forth, if not to ſeek, at leaſt ſubject
" to meet adventures wherever ſhe goes; every man
" who thinks it worth his while aſſuming a right to make
" his attacks upon her in what manner he pleaſes."

CHAP. VI.

Hiſtory of a remarkable lady. The great benefit of polite education, with the force of good example. Common occurrences of various kinds, and their natural conſequences.

" THERE is nothing more abſurdly ungene-
rous than the invectives levelled at our ſex indiſcriminately, and without inquiring into the nature of our faults, and making juſt allowances for the cauſes leading, or rather indeed impelling us to them.

" The youth of man is devoted to profitable inſtruction; but that of woman to initiation into the paths of ruin. While they are acquiring the general principles of knowledge, or learning ſome profeſſion for the exerciſe and advancement of their future lives, we are taught nothing but trifles uſeleſs in themſelves, and if not immediately criminal, yet leading indirectly to every crime, by turning the mind upon wrong purſuits, and weakening all its powers by an habit of idleneſs, impoſſible ever to be broken through; for idleneſs, my dear friend, is the bane of woman, let her attribute her failings to whatever other apparent cauſe ſhe will.

"The moſt important part of my ſtory may be compriſed in a few words. You are acquainted with my family, and the particular circumſtances of it, which made my ſituation more critically dangerous even than that of the generality of my ſex; a danger that was ſtill heightened by other circumſtances peculiar to myſelf, and which, far from being attended to in that light, and guarded againſt with proper care, were looked upon as advantages, and accordingly urged to their utmoſt force.

"Born in a rank that placed all the pleaſures of life within my reach, and bleſſed with a conſtitution equal to the enjoyment of them, I ſeemed marked out for the attacks of man; the luxuriance of my health kindling all the paſſions of nature, before reaſon could gather ſtrength to guide and keep them within proper bounds, and the liberties allowed by faſhion giving every opportunity for their gratification. Such an aptitude for pleaſure was alſo forwarded, where it ſhould have met with reſtraint.

"There are ſome perſons our relation to whom makes reſpectful mention of them a duty, be their conduct what it will. I ſhall therefore only ſay that, inſtead of inſtilling the principles of virtue by precept, and enforcing its practice by example, that perſon, whoſe example and precepts muſt have had the greateſt weight with me, exerted them quite the contrary way, turning every thing ſerious into ridicule, and indulging every licentious paſſion in the moſt public manner. The conſequence, with regard to me, may be eaſily concluded. Inclined by nature to pleaſure, I willingly imitated the pattern ſet me as far as was in my power, and launched into every exceſs, as opportunity tempted; and if I paid greater regard to appearances, and conducted myſelf with more reſerve, it was not from any reſtraint of principle; but becauſe I ſaw that faſhion did not authoriſe the ſame boundleſs liberty in youth, as it did in more advanced life.

"But this reſerve ſoon began to be very uneaſy to me, and the pleaſures I enjoyed, to be confined within narrower limits than I liked. Ripened, as I have ſaid, by the luxuriance of my conſtitution, I felt all the warmeſt

warmeſt paſſions of my ſex before it was imagined that my tender youth was capable of ſuch ſenſations, and was treated like a child long after I thought myſelf a woman. The difficulties this laid me under were often very diſagreeable. I made every explanation that was not a direct breach of decency, and gave hints which would have been readily underſtood from any one of a more advanced age. But, to my ſevere mortification, all was attributed to meer imitation; and Miſs was ſignificantly ſaid to echo her mama's words, when ſhe would much rather have practiſed her actions.

"At length, however, I was relieved from this teazing ſituation, by one of thoſe accidents which determine the fate of human life. As I was ſitting one evening at an aſſembly, fretting myſelf to death to ſee ſeveral ladies, whom I looked upon as my inferiors in every thing but age, taken out before me, an officer, who read my thoughts and was reſolved to have ſome amuſement with me, came up to the place where I ſat, and entering into chat with a young lady who was with me, led her to aſk him if he did not deſign to dance; upon which, turning to me with an air of the moſt reſpectful politeneſs, he anſwered that he would, if I would do him the favour to be his partner.

"Such a preference, though to one of my moſt intimate acquaintances, for the manner in which ſhe had aſked the queſtion was a plain offer to dance with him herſelf, was too pleaſing to be ſlighted. I aſſented moſt readily, and in the height of my ſpirits at my triumph, gave ſuch plain hints of the ſtate of my inclinations, that he ſoon comprehended them; and being ſomewhat warm with wine, made advances to me which I had long wiſhed for, but never received before.

"The impreſſion made upon us by a firſt application is hard to be reſiſted. For my part, I was too much pleaſed with it to make the attempt; and really feeling all that warmth he profeſſed, met his wiſhes more than half way. In ſuch a life as I led, and to perſons ſo diſpoſed, opportunity could not long be wanted; but when my lover came in a cooler moment to reflect on the conſequences of an intrigue with one

of my age and rank, ſhould it ever happen to be diſcovered, prudence damped the ardour of his paſſion, and prevented his carrying the conqueſt he had made to the height of our mutual deſires. But though he deferred it for the preſent, he did not abſolutely give up the deſign, when circumſtances ſhould wear a more favourable aſpect.

" In families like ours, every perſon who dreſſed well and would play had ready admiſſion. He availed himſelf of this, and under the appearance of paying a compliment to my mother, took every opportunity of attending me to all places of pleaſurable reſort.

" The difference of our age, and particularly his being married, obviated every ſuſpicion of his intentions, as they ſhould have opened my eyes to the infamy and folly of carrying on ſuch a correſpondence. But I was incapable of conſidering any thing beſide the pleaſure I felt in his company, which was evidently ſo ſincere that, beyond his deſign, it affected him, and he began alſo to feel the paſſion he had only profeſſed before.

" Though he conducted himſelf with the utmoſt circumſpection and addreſs, it was impoſſible to keep up ſuch an intercourſe long without the real motive of it being ſuſpected. The firſt hint of this alarmed the pride of my relations, though the original cauſe had not been thought worthy of their regard. They inſtantly aſſailed me with expoſtulations and reproaches, as they did my lover with menaces; but all in vain.

" There is nothing more injudicious than to diſcover a ſuſpicion of what it is not abſolutely in our power to prevent. It takes off the reſtraint of ſhame, and raiſes a falſe reſentment that urges the crime in revenge of the injurious accuſation. Inſtead of working the effect my friends deſigned, this conduct only haſtened the conſequence which they meaned to hinder. Finding they could not themſelves break off the intercourſe between us, though they knew not certainly to what length it had been carried, they had recourſe to ſuperior authority, and prevailed to have my lover ſent on an expedition, from which it was more than probable that he would never return; or at leaſt if he did,

did, it muſt be after ſuch a length of time as they doubted not would wean my affections from him, and fix them on ſome other more proper object.

"But all their ſchemes were diſappointed. The expedition miſcarried, and he returned before they imagined he had even reached the place of his deſtination; and far from being cooled in our mutual regards by abſence, they rather gathered ſtrength to break out with greater violence.

"For ſome time, however, we obſerved ſo much caution, as to ſave appearances at leaſt, let ſuſpicions be what they would. But a gardener ſurpriſing us one evening in an arbour, when we thought ourſelves ſafe from obſervation, though the fellow was highly bribed to ſecrecy, we thought it imprudent to depend upon him; my lover therefore threw up his commiſſion, and we immediately eloped together out of the reach of my friends reſentment, who, we were well convinced, would leave nothing undone to be revenged on the man who had thrown ſuch a public ſcandal on their family.

"I now thought my happineſs compleat, and giving a looſe to love, deſpiſed the cenſure of the world, and looked no farther than the preſent moment. But a little time made a change in my ſentiments, and I began to languiſh for the other pleaſures which I had forfeited by the ſtep I had taken.

"I would not by this intimate any uncommon alteration in my lover's behaviour; but the joy of novelty was worn off, deſire was ſatisfied, and reflection began to obtrude upon us. Our ſituation neceſſarily precluded us from ſociety, at leaſt any that could afford us ſatisfaction, and confined us to each other; and when the tumult of paſſion began to ſubſide, as we dared not apply to reaſon for relief, time grew tedious, and we mutually ſighed for variety, to give a reliſh even to pleaſure. The effect this had upon our tempers heightened our unhappineſs. Unable to look into ourſelves for the real cauſe, each accuſed the other of inconſtancy and want of love; and theſe reproaches, inſtead of removing the complaint, were beginning to aggravate a coolneſs that was unavoidable,

into determined diſlike and averſion: for, my dear, let us in the warmth of youthful imagination flatter ourſelves with what notions we will of eternal conſtancy and unalterable love, ſenſe will ſoon be ſated and languiſh for variety, if reaſon does not lend it's aſſiſtance to fill up the dull pauſe of paſſion. With us the conſequence was obvious, as our connexion depended entirely upon ourſelves. But before we had time to reſolve abſolutely on a ſeparation, an event happened which removed the immediate cauſe of our diſguſt, and awoke all our former tenderneſs.

CHAP. VII.

Continued. An unuſual effect of abſence. The loſs of reputation ſometimes inconvenient. Reflections on a qualification which all pretend to, and few poſſeſs; with a curious account of a man of conſequence.

"I HAVE obſerved to you that my lover had no fortune; all his hopes even depending on his military profeſſion. The manner in which he had come away with me cutting off theſe for ever in his own country, neceſſity obliged him to ſeek employment among ſtrangers. This the tumult of my thoughts had made me overlook, at the time when it was in my own power to have prevented the conſequences of it. But think what a ſtate I muſt have been in when the hour of his departure came! I look back to it with horror even now when uſe has made his abſence familiar to me, and ſoftened many of the inconveniencies of it.

"Without the converſation of a friend, to beguile the tedious melancholy hours, and blunt the ſting of grief; without the approbation of my own mind, to ſweeten thought and make reflection a pleaſure, I was left a ſtranger in a ſtrange place; and, what was ſtill worſt of all, every morſel I eat imbittered by the dreadful conſideration, that it was earned at the inſtant hazard of the life deareſt to me in the world; for the firſt thought of our parting removed all that wearineſs

which had been the cauſe of our diſguſt, and the occaſion of it doubly endeared us, by ſhewing how much we had given up, how much more we hazarded for each other.

" Our parting exceeded the power of deſcription. After the firſt tranſports of my grief were over, I ſunk into a ſtate of inſenſibility, and grew abſolutely indifferent to myſelf and every thing about me, fixing my thoughts entirely on the days which were to bring me an account from him, and living only for their arrival.

" At length lenient time began to adminiſter its never-failing relief; and youth and health united their powers to diſſipate a gloom ſo contrary to my natural diſpoſition; I gradually recovered my ſpirits, and felt again a reliſh for the pleaſures of ſociety. But theſe pleaſures were very different from thoſe which I had formerly delighted in. My mind had learned to think, and I had had time to view things in another light from that in which they had appeared before. My affections, it is true, were ſtill the ſame, invariably fixed upon my friend, and all the wiſhes of my heart centered in him; how juſtly though I did not dare to conſider, holding every thing that concerned him too ſacred to be even enquired into.

" Theſe wiſhes indeed were of a much more extenſive and exalted kind, than thoſe which had given riſe to our connexion. You may have obſerved that I called him my *friend*. From this time, I looked upon him in that light; and if not entirely in that alone, the very uniting the idea of friendſhip with love was the higheſt improvement to the latter, and in a great meaſure purified it from every groſs allay.

" The effect this had upon my mind is ſcarce to be conceived; I was not incapable of thought; but I had never given myſelf time to think. The moment therefore that I began, I found a pleaſure in it which cannot be conceived; every hour brought me knowledge that made me both ſurpriſed at, and aſhamed of my former blindneſs and ignorance; I read in my own mind, though unhappily too late, all the wiſdom neceſſary for the conduct of life. I thus literally became a new creature; and on my emerſion from the

ſolitude in which I had buried myſelf ſince my friend's departure, ſought the company (and flatter myſelf that I was not unworthy of it) of the moſt valuable part of the ſex.

"But I ſoon had the mortification to find myſelf precluded from this pleaſing hope. Retired and unexceptionably as we had lived, the circumſtances of our elopement had ſome how been diſcovered; ſo that when I appeared in company, inſtead of meeting the reception I had fondly expected, my advances toward intimacy were repulſed by my own ſex, and I found myſelf expoſed to the familiarity and libertine addreſſes of the other, who always lay it down as a rule, that a woman who has broken thro' the laws of virtue with one man, has entirely thrown off all farther regard to them, and is a fair quarry for general purſuit.

"You may eaſily judge what a ſhock this was to me. I now began to feel the ineſtimable loſs of reputation, and returned to my former retirement with an heart burſting with diſappointment, ſhame and remorſe. But I was not ſuffered long to enjoy the peace I ſought even there. My new admirers purſued me, and in ſpite of all I could ſay perſiſted in their gallantry; and that often in a manner too groſs to have been offered to any but a profeſſed proſtitute.

"Had this happened ſome time ſooner, I ſhould have inſtantly written to my friend, to come to my *relief* from ſuch inſolent abuſe; but my thoughts had now taken a new turn, and I dreaded nothing more than its coming to his knowledge, for fear of any ill conſequences to himſelf from the warmth of his temper, which I knew would be provoked to the higheſt rage at ſuch an attempt. For this reaſon I reſolved to take no notice of it to him, but behave in ſuch a manner to my admirers as ſhould make them ridiculous even in their own eyes.

"Habits long confirmed are not eaſily broken through by the beſt reſolutions. I had a natural levity of temper; and the critical nature of my intercourſe with my friend before our elopement, laid me under a kind of neceſſity of practiſing coquetry in my general conduct, in hopes of covering my particular

connection

connection with him. I will therefore take ſhame to myſelf, and confeſs that in my preſent ſolitary condition, the proſpect of amuſement, in playing off their fooliſh addreſſes, had ſome weight with me in this deſign; never conſidering that ſuch a conduct was inconſiſtent with the principles in which I now prided myſelf, and muſt inevitably diſappoint my hopes of recovering the eſteem of the prudent and virtuous of my own, and rational part of the other ſex.

"I ſee you are affected with this melancholy detail; but my heart was ſo full that I could not ſtop its overflowing. I ſhall now conclude with one of the many adventures which this new ſcheme of mine produced, the oddity of which will probably reſtore you to ſpirits.

"The perſons who thought proper to do me the honour of declaring themſelves my admirers were of every age and rank in the place. As they had diſcovered the nobility of my birth, they all thought it incumbent upon them to diſplay their utmoſt politeneſs in the manner of making their addreſſes. Though every country has peculiar cuſtoms which conſtitute the rule of behaviour, true politeneſs is eſſentially the ſame every where, and differs only in the external modes of expreſſing it. The mechanical part, as I may juſtly call it, which conſiſts in cringes and compliments, may be eaſily learned; but the unembarraſſed eaſe and proper freedom of addreſs and deportment, which denominate the character at firſt ſight, and that deſire to give pleaſure, which pleaſes in its very appearance, muſt have a foundation from nature, in a benevolent and generous diſpoſition, and be confirmed by early education and long practice. The latter indeed may give an habit that ſhall deceive a ſuperficial view; but where the former is wanting, the judicious obſerver will ſoon diſcover and deſpiſe the impoſture.

"I had abundant experience of the juſtice of this remark in the behaviour of my new admirers. Had I had nothing more than meer common amuſement in my thoughts, this would have afforded me ſufficient; but reſentment at their impudence made me determined to

puſh their folly to its utmoſt length, and then expoſe it to public ridicule.

" The few who really poſſeſſed that politeneſs which all aped, ſoon perceived, by the manner of my receiving their advances, that they were diſagreeable to me, and accordingly they deſiſted from giving me any farther trouble. But their aukward imitators in the externals of good-breeding, forming their judgment of me from themſelves, conſtrued my complaiſance into approbation, and thought I was pleaſed with what they ſaid, becauſe I did not directly fly into an outrage; but when I had taken time to look into their characters, and ſee which was fitteſt for my purpoſe to work upon, I gave the reſt their diſmiſſion, in the manner moſt like to take effect.

" Among the ſelected few whom I permitted to flatter themſelves with hopes of ſucceſs was an old burgher, who had made an immenſe fortune by every iniquitous practice in the myſterious buſineſs of a *contractor*, for ſupplying the armies of the powers at war with proviſions. Though he was ſprung from the very dregs of mankind, and had paſſed his youth in the moſt ſordid and ſervile employments, his heart was ſo puffed up by his riches, that he muſt on all occaſions aſſume the man of birth and good-breeding. This his own baſe diſpoſition made it impoſſible for him to do in any thing beſide their follies and vices, in all of which he made a moſt remarkable figure. He built fine houſes, he bought pictures, he gamed; and, to compleat his character, he muſt now have a miſtreſs of *quality*; and I, forſooth, was the happy object he had pitched upon for this honour.

" I ſhould have obſerved, that as ſoon as he took it into his head to commence a man of figure, he had married a wife, whoſe whole fortune conſiſted in the nobility of her family, being deſcended in the ninth remove from a German baron, and none of her illuſtrious anceſtors having ſtained their blood by any kind of induſtry.

" Before he could obtain ſuch an honour, he was obliged to hire an herald to deduce his pedigree, by the eaſy means of changing only four letters in his name,

name, from an equally illuſtrious houſe; and to turn an only daughter by a former wife, whoſe induſtry had been greatly aſſiſtant to his making his fortune, out of doors, without any proviſion more than a bare ſupport from abſolute want.

"The diſpoſition that could demand ſuch terms was far from being ſoftened, when its tyranny was confirmed by marriage. She governed in the moſt deſpotic manner. He was obliged to quit buſineſs. His fortune was laviſhed upon her relations, who let him know they thought him honoured by their acceptance of it; and he was but a cypher in his own houſe, where every ſervant quoted her command for diſputing his authority, and told him directly that he was not qualified to give directions in ſo genteel a family.

"In ſuch a ſituation it was not ſtrange that he ſhould ſeek for ſatisfaction abroad; but even in this his deſign was conſiſtent with the reſt of his conduct, and very different from what might moſt naturally be imagined. Inſignificant as he was at home, he gave himſelf the higheſt airs of politeneſs and conſequence among his companions, where he was ſafe from the terror of his tyrant's power, to confirm his title to which character, as I have ſaid before, he formed the project of paying his addreſſes to me, not from any particular paſſion he had for me.

CHAP. VIII.

Continued. A ſhort way of making love. Bargains beſt made in few words; with an odd inſtance of old-faſhioned folly.

"IT is impoſſible to give any deſcription of this important perſon's courtſhip. His politeneſs, it is true, reached ſo high as to accoſt me with as many bows and cringes as make the awkward ceremonial of ſome crowned heads, and with an equally good grace. But here it all ended; and when he came to ſpeak to me, it was in the ſame phraſe and manner as he would have bargained for a parcel of cheeſe, or meal.

"Madam,

"Madam, (ſaid he) underſtanding as how your "ladyſhip's favours are to be diſpoſed of, I come to "treat about the purchaſe. I like the appearance "of your commodities, and do not doubt but they "are in good order, and merchantable; and ſhall there-"fore give you your own price. I am not one of your "higgling chaps that make many words to a bargain. "Ready money is my way; and the reſt I leave to "yourſelf."

"Though I had ſtudied my part very well, I was ſomewhat diſconcerted at ſuch an addreſs. Recovering myſelf, however, in a few minutes, I was rather diverted than offended at the oddity of it, and reſolved to drive the *bargain*, as he juſtly called it, in his own way. Accordingly I anſwered him with an affected confuſion, that I did not rightly underſtand what he meant.

"Madam, (replied he) my meaning is, to— to— "to——. In ſhort, madam, plain dealing is beſt. My "meaning is, to purchaſe ſome certain favours from "you, for which I am willing to pay you the higheſt "price of the market. I deſpiſe making fine ſpeeches; "but if you are inclined to deal, no one ſhall out-bid "me. I never think good wares to dear. Come! "Don't ſtand ſhilly ſhally! Say! Is it a bargain, aye, "or no?

"It was impoſſible for me to pretend ignorance any longer; though I did not think proper to accept of his propoſals too readily, for fear it ſhould make him think ſlightly of my *ware*; at the ſame time that I ſaw it was neceſſary to keep up his hopes, by ſeeming to enter into treaty with him, as he was inſenſible of that expectation and anxiety which to minds of more delicacy are the food of love.

"You men of conſequence (I anſwered) have a pe-"culiar way of doing every thing. Your fortunes "raiſe you above the formalities neceſſary to be ob-"ſerved by other people. I own I do not diſapprove "of your propoſal; but as it is a thing which I have "never yet thought about, I muſt take ſome time to "conſider what terms are proper for me to make. In

"the

" the mean while I ſhall be glad to ſee you as often as " it is convenient for you to do me that honour."

" Odſo, madam, (returned he, overjoyed at his " ſucceſs) you are a ſenſible woman, and ſpeak like " one that has been uſed to buſineſs. I like you the " better for your frankneſs. It is my own way. And " when you have fixed your price, we ſhall not differ. " There ſhall be no delay on my part. Ready Mo- " ney! Ready money is always my word." — " Saying this my lover took his leave, and left me not a little at a loſs how to manage with him.

" As I was no ſtranger to the circumſtances of his family, the firſt thought that occurred to me was, to reveal the whole to his wife, and concert meaſures with her for puniſhing his infidelity and preſumption. But upon reflection, I enlarged my ſcheme, and reſolved to try if I could not turn his ridiculous paſſion to ſome advantage for his deſerted daughter, before I gave him up to her chaſtiſement.

" Accordingly I went directly to a lady with whom I knew ſhe was acquainted, and enquiring, as if from common curioſity, into her circumſtances and character, had the pleaſure to find her every way worthy of my regard and aſſiſtance. I therefore ſent for her very privately that evening, as if to give her ſome needle-work to do for me, her father's allowance being ſo ſmall that ſhe was obliged to have recourſe to induſtry, to enable her to live with any degree of comfort, though ſhame made her do it with as much privacy as poſſible; and giving my converſation that turn which I thought moſt likely to win her confidence, preſſed her to let me know her deſigns and proſpects for life, for making ſuch enquiry I aſſured her that I had other motives than meer curioſity.

" Moved by the manner in which I ſpoke, ſhe burſt into a flood of tears; and, as ſoon as ſhe was able to ſpeak, told me modeſtly, that ſhe had no proſpects, and was incapable of forming any deſigns; that indeed the height of her wiſhes would be to be married to a young man who had been bred to buſineſs under her father, but was turned off as well as herſelf on the

new-

new-ordering of his family; that they had loved each other from their infancy; but he having no fortune to enter into trade with, his family which was very reputable, having been ruined by the calamities of war; and her father abandoning her in the manner he did, they could not think of transmitting their misfortunes to their innocent posterity by marrying; and therefore had vowed to each other to live single, as the only proof they could give of the sincerity of their mutual attachment.

"I was not proof to such a story. I embraced her tenderly; and assuring her of my friendship, bade her hope for an happy change in her fortune very speedily. I then enquired how much would be sufficient to settle her husband in business with a prospect of success, and encourage them to marry? and on her answering, that if they had about a thousand crowns to add to some little matter they had already made a shift to lay up by their frugality, they would venture, and trust the event to the blessing of providence on their honest industry. I told her, that if I was not disappointed much beyond my expectation, she should not long want a greater sum than that; but that all depended on her not taking the least notice of her having been with me, or even mentioning my name to any one living, till I should give her permission. This caution she promised to observe most carefully, and then took her leave with a lighter heart than she had felt for some time.

"My design upon my *ready-money* lover was now urged by a better motive than either amusement or revenge, which had first set me upon it. The money, which I doubted not to extort from his absurd passion, I resolved to give to his daughter; and then to make use of the assistance of his wife, to avoid performing my part of the bargain, and compleat my original scheme, who, I was sensible, would not only punish him sufficiently for his vicious folly, but also expose him to the highest and most public ridicule.

CHAP.

CHAP. IX.

Continued. Many buyers raiſe the market. On ballancing avarice and vanity the former kicks the beam.

"ACCORDINGLY, when he came to pay me a viſit next morning, I gave him an opportunity of renewing his treaty, which he preſſed ſo warmly to be brought to a concluſion, that after a little affected heſitation, I condeſcended to capitulate; and at length aſſented to his propoſal for the conſideration of two thouſand crowns.

"At the mention of ſuch a ſum he looked aghaſt. "Two thouſand crowns! (ſaid he, as ſoon as he "could ſhut his mouth to articulate a word) Why, "ſure your ladyſhip can't be ſerious! I never heard "of ſuch a thing in my life. Two thouſand crowns "for a night's lodging! I have lodged a whole army "for leſs before now. You ſurely can't be ſerious, "in making ſuch a demand! A prince is not able to "purchaſe your favours at ſuch a price."

"Then no prince ſhall have them, Sir, (anſwered "I, putting on a look of offended dignity) and if you "think my demand too high, you are welcome to go "where you may be ſerved cheaper. I know where I "can have more from another perſon; but as you "ſpoke firſt, I would not treat with any one elſe till I "had concluded with you."

——"More than two thouſand crowns! Death, "Madam, it is impoſſible. Who is able to offer more "than two thouſand crowns!"

——"Really, Sir, I do not think myſelf obliged "to anſwer ſuch a queſtion. However, to let you "ſee that I am above impoſing on you, What do you "think of the *count?*"

"At that word his pride inſtantly took fire. He had been born a vaſſal of the count's family, to efface the remembrance of which he now took every opportunity of entering into competition, and inſulting him with the oſtentatious diſplay of his ſuperior wealth. This I knew, and therefore made uſe of his name, though

though without any authority, as the ſureſt method of working him up to my deſign, being confident he would ſcorn to be outdone in any thing, much more a matter ſo eſſential to his character, by one whom he both hated and deſpiſed ſo highly.

" The event ſhewed I had judged right." The " count, madam! (ſaid he, with an air of contempt) " Why! What of him? Is not my money as good as " his?

—— " Yes, Sir, I believe it may; but you do not " ſeem ſo well inclined to part with it. I thought af- " ter what you ſaid laſt night, that we ſhould not " have a ſecond word; but I find people can " talk of their ready money without opening their " purſes."

" Madam! I'd have you to know, madam, that I " ſcorn ſuch an imputation. It is well known that I " never go back from my word, Madam. When I " ſay it, I will do it. But really don't you think you " aſk too much? Is there no prevailing on you to a- " bate?"

—— " Sir, you ſaid yeſterday, that you did not " like to make many words; no more do I, Sir. On " the ſtrength of your offering ready money I ſet the " very loweſt terms; and I wonder how you can " think them much to a woman of my quality. In my " country, I have known an orange-girl get more. But " perhaps you would chuſe ſuch low-lived creatures; " though I own I took you for a perſon of better ſpi- " rit, and above deſcending to any thing unworthy " of your rank; and I am ſorry to find that I am miſ- " taken. It is true I had ſome hints of the kind given " me, and therefore did not give the count a poſitive " denial; ſo that I can eaſily come to treat with him " again. He knows what is due to a lady of diſtinc- " tion, and will not make words about ſuch a trifle. " So, Sir, your humble ſervant."

" While I was making this notable and delicate ſpeech, which I could ſcarce ſuppreſs my laughter to utter, he ſtood in the moſt whimſical ſituation, as if ballancing the account between avarice and vanity. At length the latter prevailing, " Hold, madam, (ſaid " he,

" he, catching me by the ſleeve, for fear I ſhould " leave him) pray don't be in ſuch a violent hurry. " I know how to behave to you as well as the count, " and better too; and I'll ſee him damn'd before he " ſhall touch the hem of your garment. I'll make " him know that he ſhall not pretend to outbid me, " for any thing I have a mind to! That I will! And " ſo, madam, you ſhall have your price, without any " drawback; and in earneſt of the bargain, take this " purſe of an hundred ducats. Only name the time " and place; that's all. That's all; I won't ſtand for " a receipt."

—— " Then, Sir, if you will pleaſe to come ſecret- " ly, at ten to-morrow night, to my garden door, I'll " meet you there myſelf, and conduct you up."

—— " Very well; I'll be ſure to come. I am al- " ways punctual to a minute, in thoſe affairs; but " muſt I bring the reſt of the money with me, or " will you make me your banker, and draw it out " as you want it?

—— " I ſhould, Sir, with all my heart; but it hap- " pens that I have occaſion for it to-morrow morn- " ing, and therefore muſt beg the favour of you to " bring it to me by nine o'clock."

—— " How, madam! Nine o'clock in the morning! " I thought you ſaid ten at night."

—— " Yes, Sir, ſo I did, to perform my part of the " bargain. I only mean that you ſhould bring the " money ſo early, as I have a preſſing call for it in " the fore-noon. I preſume you have no objection " obliging me ſo far; and don't doubt my honour to " keep my promiſe."

" N— N— No, madam! I— I— I can't ſay as " how I do doubt your ladyſhip's honour in the leaſt, " for the matter of that. But ſtill, I— I— I—. " Will not the evening do as well? I ſhould be glad " to oblige you, to be ſure; but advancing money " before we have even had a ſample of the goods, is " quite out of the way of buſineſs. It is what I ne- " ver do."

—— " Then, Sir, here is your purſe again; and I " am ſorry to have thrown away ſo much time. I

" muſt

" muſt and will have the money to-morrow morning.
" I know the count will make no difficulty. Perſons
" of quality have confidence in each other."

—— " Madam, I have as much confidence as he,
" or any man; and as for *quality*, with the addition
" of my wife's arms, I have nine quarterings more
" than he. His rank indeed! And ſo, madam, I am
" ready to oblige your ladyſhip with all my heart, if
" it was ten times more. I only ſaid it was out of
" the courſe of buſineſs. I did not refuſe you. No!
" No! I know better what is due to a perſon of
" rank, than to refuſe ſuch a trifle. We always have
" a regard for one another."

—— " Then, Sir, I may depend upon you, at nine
" in the morning without fail."

—— " You may moſt aſſuredly, madam; and ſo take
" the earneſt again."

" All things being thus ſettled, I permitted him the honour of a ſalute, as earneſt of the bargain on my ſide, and ſent him away quite happy.

" I ſuppoſe his impatience for the arrival of the next morning was not quite ſo high as mine, violent as his paſſion was. However he was punctual to his time; and being immediately admitted to my dreſſing-room, as ſoon as the ſervants withdrew, Here, ma-
" dam, (ſaid he, with an emotion that ſhewed the
" ſtruggle in his breaſt at what he was doing) here is
" the money. You may tell it over. I have only de-
" ducted the hundred ducats I gave you in earneſt,
" and the uſual diſcount for advancing money before-
" hand; only five per cent, no more; and we never
" do it for leſs. Buſineſs will not afford it."

" Well, Sir, (anſwered I, fully ſatisfied that I was
" ſecure of ſo much) I do not underſtand thoſe mat-
" ters; but I leave it entirely to you. And to con-
" vince you that I am a perſon of honour, I will be
" as punctual to my appointment as you have been to
" your's. At ten preciſely, you ſhall find me at the
" garden-door. But, for fear of being obſerved, don't
" you think it would be better if you were to diſguiſe
" yourſelf ſome-way. A lady's reputation, you know,
" is a very tender thing; neither would it be ſo proper,

" that

" that a perſon of your dignity ſhould be diſcovered. " It would leſſen your importance in the eyes of the " public."

——" Why, madam, to be ſure, what your lady- " ſhip ſays is very right; and therefore, though I ſhall " ſcarce know myſelf when I lay by my robes, I will " ſtrive to do without them for once, and come diſ- " guiſed in the dreſs of any private gentleman. I have " heard that the greateſt pleaſure of an intrigue is " in the ſtratagems and tricks that are practiſed to hide " it. Hah! hah! hah! And ſo I wiſh your ladyſhip " a good morning. At ten! Remember at ten."

" My ſcheme having ſucceeded thus far, I was impatient to communicate their good fortune to thoſe who were to reap the benefit of it. I therefore wrote to his daughter, to come to me that night about eleven o'clock, and bring her lover with her. The great difficulty now was how to open the affair to the wife, in ſuch a manner, that ſhe ſhould be ready to be produced at a proper time, without danger of her letting her wrath break out too ſoon, ſo as to prevent the accompliſhment of my deſign.

" The only way I could think of was, to go to the lady from whom I had the ſtory of the family, and who, I had reaſon to believe, would gladly give her aſſiſtance to promote any ſcheme for puniſhing her huſband, and expoſing him to ridicule. At the firſt mention of the affair, ſhe entered moſt heartily into it; and to make ſure of the lady, went directly and engaged her to ſpend the evening with her; not chuſing to let her know a word of the matter till every thing ſhould be ripe for execution, for fear of the violence of her temper.

CHAP.

CHAP. X.

Continued. Liſteners ſeldom like what they hear. The danger of provoking high blood; with the great merit of peace-making in the modern way.

"ALL things being thus prepared, the expected hour at length arrived when I attended to admit my gallant, who did not make me wait long. On my opening the garden-door, I was ſurpriſed to ſee the manner in which he had diſguiſed himſelf. He had put on an old ſuit of cloaths all over dawb'd with lace, which had belonged half a century before to a relation of his wife's, whom the tradition of her family recorded to have been a general officer; and which ſhe preſerved with the moſt religious care, as an indiſputable proof of her illuſtrious deſcent, ſupplying new lace or cloth occaſionally, to repair the depredations of time.

"The abſurdity of putting on for privacy a dreſs whoſe glaringneſs and ſingularity muſt attract the notice of every one who ſaw it, and would probably draw the mob after his heels, could not have eſcaped any one but himſelf; but his head was too intent upon making a figure in the eyes of his miſtreſs, to mind any thing elſe; as I was far from being diſpleaſed at it, my motive for deſiring him to diſguiſe himſelf being only to expoſe him to ſtronger ridicule on detection, which I did not deſign he ſhould eſcape.

"As ſoon as he entered the garden, his firſt care was to make me obſerve the brilliancy of his appearance, by telling me that according to my deſire he had come in diſguiſe, but could not poſſibly debaſe himſelf or diſhonour me ſo much as to put on any dreſs unworthy of his rank, or improper to appear in before me. I thanked him for my ſhare of his compliment; and being apprehenſive that he might be for taking ſome liberties which I did not like, if I made any delay there, led him directly up to my own chamber, where I left him in the dark, telling him I would return as ſoon as I ſaw my ſervants properly diſpoſed of.

"I then

" I then went down into the parlour, where my confederate had juſt brought his wife, big with expectation of hearing ſomething from me that nearly concerned her honour. Few words were requiſite to introduce a ſubject which all were equally impatient for. I directly unfolded to her the injuſtice deſigned to her bed; (the affair of the money I thought proper not to mention for obvious reaſons) and telling her, that having in vain tried every argument to get rid of his importunity, and convince him of the flagrancy of ſuch a crime againſt a lady of her rank, I had at length pretended to comply with his deſires, on purpoſe to give him up to her admonitions and authority, which I hoped might be more effectual to reclaim him; and therefore made an appointment with him, as if to gratify his vile deſires, in conſequence of which he was that very moment in my chamber, whither ſhe was at liberty to go to him.

" It is impoſſible to deſcribe the effect this ſtory had on her. She ſtood for ſome moments convulſed with rage. At length recovering herſelf a little, ſhe was for going directly and trampling the wretch under her feet; but her friend interpoſed and inſinuating, as we had concerted, that though what I had ſaid might poſſibly be very true, it would yet be a ſatisfaction to the lady to be a witneſs to it herſelf; wherefore ſhe thought it would be the beſt way, if I pleaſed, for me to return to him, and enter into ſome ſuch diſſuaſive diſcourſe as I had before uſed, his anſwers to which would confirm what I had ſaid, and be a teſtimony againſt him, that he could not attempt to deny or evade. To this I replied with an offended air, that I was not accuſtomed to have what I ſaid doubted; however, on ſuch an occaſion as this I ſhould wave all punctilio, to give ſatisfaction to one for whom I had ſo high a reſpect as her ladyſhip; and therefore was ready to do that, or any thing elſe ſhe ſhould deſire.

" Flattered by this compliment, ſhe nodded majeſtically, and ſuppreſſing her wrath as well as ſhe could, let me know that ſhe would attend me to the diſgraceful ſcene.

" My

" My gallant was by this time beginning to be impatient. On my opening the door (which I left open for his wife, though I ſhot the lock to impoſe upon him) he advanced to me, and taking me by the hand aſked why I had not brought a light? " Deeds " of darkneſs (ſaid I, with a loud ſigh) ſhould avoid " the light. I do not believe I ſhall ever bear to ſee " the light again after conſenting to give you this " meeting. But I hope you will reflect on the black- " neſs of ſuch a crime as this you have been ſo " long ſolliciting me to, and deſiſt before it is too " late."

—" Hey-day! What can be the meaning of all " this? What fool's-play can you be at now? Come! " Come! For ſhame, ſtand to your word. I cannot " ſtay long with you to-night. I muſt be at home " before my *Jezabel* of a wife, to pull off theſe " cloaths. If ſhe ſhould ſee them upon me, I ſhould " never hear the laſt of it. I cannot ſtay above an " hour; and ſo make haſte."

——" I am amazed, Sir, that you can ſpeak of a " lady of your wife's rank in ſo diſreſpectful a man- " ner! It gives me a very bad opinion of you. She " merits better treatment; and after the honour ſhe " has done you in condeſcending to be your wife, it " is the higheſt injuſtice and ingratitude in you to " wrong her bed with any body elſe."

——" Blood, madam, you are enough to make a " man mad, to ſtand trifling ſo at ſuch a time as this! " As to what you ſay about my wife's bed, it is all " nonſenſe. No man can bear to bed with ſuch an " ugly, filthy brute; and for the honour ſhe did me, " I am ſure I have paid dearly for it. I have raiſed " her great family from beggary. They had not a rag " to cover their illuſtrious nakedneſs, till I took com- " paſſion"——

" At theſe words, in burſt his wife like a tygreſs robbed of her whelps. " Villain! ſlave! baſe mecha- " nic: (exclaimed ſhe) You take compaſſion on my " family! You raiſe them from beggary! But I'll not " ſtoop to talk to you. I'll have ſatisfaction! I will! " The blood of your baſe heart ſhall waſh away the " affront.

" affront. I'll ſummon all my relations tomorrow-
" morning, and lay your villainy before them. They'll
" vindicate the honour of our houſe; they'll do juſ-
" tice to themſelves and me, in a manner that ſhall
" ſtrike terror into all ſuch ungrateful wretches."

" While ſhe poured out theſe threats, ſhe was ſearching for him all round the room; but he fortunately eſcaped her by creeping under the bed, the moment he heard her voice, where he lay in a ſituation that may eaſily be conceived. Not being able to find him, ſhe roared out for lights; but I thought it would be too ſevere to give him up, till her anger ſhould be ſomewhat cooled, and therefore countermanded them; and as ſhe had by this time raved herſelf out of breath, I took her by the hand, and leading her to a chair, " Pray, madam, (ſaid I, in a ſoothing accent) ſit " down for a moment and ſtrive to compoſe yourſelf. " I own, the provocation you have received is very " great, to have your bed ſlighted, and your perſon " ſpoke ſo injuriouſly of."—

" Mention not that! (anſwered ſhe) mention not " that! I deſpiſe him too much to regard any thing he " can ſay of myſelf. But my family! The villain, to " traduce my family, and talk of their being under " obligation to him! They who ſuffered him to " come into their pedigree, and quarter their arms! " I will have revenge. I will have his heart's " blood."

" The reſentment you ſhew, madam, (interpoſed " the other lady) is worthy of you, and proves the " nobility of your blood. No perſon of family can " bear ſuch abuſe. But ſtill, madam, conſider who " it is that has offered it. A creature that is not " worthy of the reſentment of your relations, and has " not the ſpirit to meet them to be killed fairly, and " as a man of honour ſhould kill him; and you would " not have them turn aſſaſſins and murder him, and ſo " let all his fortune go to his daughter, as you could " not inherit it after ſuch an action. For all theſe " reaſons I would recommend it to you to make up " this ugly affair. What has paſſed is known only to " ourſelves, and need go no farther. Wherefore, if

" he

" he will aſk your pardon for what he intended to do, " and actually ſaid to this lady, and will make over " half his fortune to you, to ſettle upon your own fa- " mily, in caſe you ſhould have no children your- " ſelf, I think your ladyſhip had better forgive " him."

" The other heard her out with great patience; and then pauſing for ſome time, as if to weigh matters, " Well, madam, (ſaid ſhe, ſighing) ſince you " adviſe it, I ſubmit. For this offence I will accept " of the ſatisfaction you propoſe; but let him take " care how he repeats it."

" Matters being thus happily adjuſted, I called for lights, and deſired my gallant to make his appearance, who having overheard all that paſſed, ventured to creep out of his hole, tho' without daring to ſpeak a word.

CHAP. XI.

Concluded. A relapſe is often worſe than the firſt diſorder. By the help of good friends, the grey mare proves the better horſe. The whole concluded with ſome intereſting reflections, which prove that people ſhould look before they leap.

" THE candles diſcovered a groupe of figures not eaſy to be deſcribed. My unfortunate gallant, all pale and trembling, his buſhy wig turned awry, and the powder of it ſpread over his cloaths, which were all tumbled and dropping wet from ſomething he had ſpilled in his creeping under the bed, fixed his haggard eyes upon his tender mate, who no ſooner perceived the ſplendid relicks of her kinſman's rank abuſed in ſuch a manner, than forgetting her pacific reſolution, ſhe relapſed into all her former fury.

" Audacious villain (exclaimed ſhe, her eyes glaring with rage, and her whole face diſtorted with every diabolical paſſion) " to profane that ſacred teſti- " mony of the honour of my family on ſuch a wick- " ed,

" ed, baſe occaſion! Were you not afraid that the " offended ſpirit of it's illuſtrious owner would come " and tear it from your vicious carcaſe? But he has " left the taſk to me."

" Saying this, ſhe flew at the trembling wretch with an impetuoſity not to be prevented, and, driving her fangs into his cheeks, in an inſtant bathed his face in blood. Cowards when arouzed are always moſt deſperate. Though nothing could have made him face her fury deliberately, the moment he felt her claws in his fleſh he forgot his fears, and giving an hideous roar, returned her aſſault with equal violence, faſtening one hand in her hair, and ſtriking her on the face and breaſt with all his might with the other.

" The combat now was really terrible, and the victory for ſome time doubtful. But at length with our aſſiſtance, who, when we thought ſhe had ſuffered enough, under the appearance of parting them, overpowered him, the amazon got the better, and kneeling on his breaſt as he lay on the ground, vented her rage upon him while ſhe was able to ſtrike a blow. When ſhe could beat him no more, we made a ſhift to to ſeparate and raiſe them from the ground, and having with ſome difficulty reſtored them both to their ſenſes, reſumed our mediation, in which we were ſo ſucceſsful, both parties being ſufficiently ſick of the quarrel, that a reconciliation was agreed to, which we took care ſhould be on the moſt mortifying terms to the old letcher.

" During all theſe tranſactions, my poor gallant uſed frequently to look at me ſo ſignificantly, that I was afraid his wife would have obſerved it, and extorted an explanation. But it eſcaped her notice, and he thought proper not to mention any thing of the matter; whether that he judged ſuch an inſtance of extravagance would only provoke her more; for, laviſh as ſhe was of his money upon her relations, ſhe grudged him every penny he ſpent; or concluded from my conduct, that I ſhould deny the charge, which in that caſe would only aggravate his ſhame, as he had no proof of it.

" To confirm him in this opinion, which I gueſſed to be the cauſe of his ſilence when his lady and he were firſt ready to depart, I muſtered up all the aſſurance I could; and addreſſing myſelf to her; " I " hope, madam (ſaid I) that if this odd affair ſhould " ever happen to be known, you will bear witneſs " to the purity and virtue of my conduct: And you, " Sir, I muſt caution againſt taking any liberties with " my character, with a view of extenuating your own " crime, or laying any thing to my charge which you " cannot plainly prove, as you regard your life; " which, you are ſenſible, would be made anſwera- " ble for any inſult offered to me."

" To this ſpeech ſhe replied in the affirmative, while her huſband returned only one of his expreſſive looks, and then they lovingly departed together.

" When my confederate and I had indulged our mirth for ſome time, we went to my gallant's daughter, who, with her lover, was juſt then come. On my entering the room where they were, the ſtrongeſt anxiety appeared in both their faces, though modeſty prevented their giving it utterance. Not to keep them in pain, " You told me yeſterday, madam, " (ſaid I, taking her by the hand) that a thouſand " crowns would give you a proſpect of happineſs, with " this deſerving gentleman. I now have the pleaſure " to inform you, that I have applied to your father, " with whom I have pleaded ſo ſucceſsfully, that I " have got you two thouſand from him, which I have " ready to give you, and hope heaven will bleſs it in " your hands."

" What this happy pair felt on this occaſion, may be eaſier conceived than deſcribed. They fell together on their knees before I could poſſibly prevent them, and kiſſing my hands, bathed them with tears of extacy. My heart melted in ſympathy with them. I raiſed them from the ground, and embracing them both, led them, unable to ſpeak, into the next room, where I put the money into the lady's hands who directly gave it to him. We then ſat down to ſupper, during which, to relieve their ſpirits that were ſinking under the preſſure of joy and gratitude, I gave a looſe

to

to the pleaſure my heart was overflowing with, and entertained them in the moſt obliging and familiar manner; and when the ſervants retired gratified their curioſity, which I ſaw raiſed to a torture, with an account of the whole affair, but in the light moſt favourable to my old gallant, to avoid giving his daughter pain, who, notwithſtanding his unnatural treatment of her, never mentioned him but in terms of duty and reſpect.

" Though the burgher and his lady had promiſed, as really they ought for their own ſakes, to keep this curious affair ſecret, it ſoon took wind. The lady, whoſe natural ſweetneſs of temper was not much encreaſed by this affair, never ſaw the livid marks of her huſband's proweſs upon her face, or thought of the profanation of her kinſman's clothes, that ſhe did not read him a comfortable lecture on his baſeneſs and debauchery before all companies; by which means all ſhe knew of the matter became public. But this was not all. My gallant had boaſted among his intimates of his ſupplanting the count in my favour; and when he was ſo far recovered from the effects of his wife's reſentment as to be able to ſhew his face, ſcrupled not to ſay that he had carried his ſucceſs to the height of his wiſhes, though he never took courage to renew his applications to me, nor even, which I wondered at, to demand reſtitution of his money.

" This laid me under a neceſſity of telling the whole affair, in my own vindication, both his giving me the money and the uſe I had made of it, which gave the ſtory another turn; thoſe who were moſt unfavourable in their opinions of me before now changing their note and extolling my juſtice and generoſity to the ſkies. Nor was this the only advantage I received from it. The reſt of my admirers, terrified by the burgher's fate, thought proper to draw off in time, and give up a purſuit that might be attended with danger; ſo that I was delivered from the perſecution of their impertinence.

" By this time the campaign was ended, and my friend returned to me, who enjoyed the whole ſtory with the higheſt pleaſure; but as my gallant might ſome-way have it in his power to make my abode in

that place diſagreeable, for he was more vexed at the uſe I had applied his money to, than at his own loſing it, before he took the field next ſeaſon, he removed me hither where I have lived ever ſince, if not in the credit I could wiſh, yet without any new reproach, and where I want nothing ſo much as the approbation of my own mind to make me happy.

"You may probably wonder why I do not ſeek this happineſs, by breaking off my preſent connection with my friend, and returning to my family! But, alas, the things which we ought to do are not always in our power. I ſee what is beſt, but I follow that which is worſt. My heart is now ſo wedded to him, (if I may uſe the expreſſion) that death only can part me from him; and though the pleaſure I enjoy in his company is never without allay, even for the poor pittance of his time which it is in his power to ſpend with me, from the reflection of its being criminal both in the commencement and continuation of it, I have not reſolution, I cannot even ſay I have a wiſh to be ſeparated from him.

"Beſide, whom ſhould I return to? What happineſs could I expect at home? My family indeed have let me know that they would receive me; but how? Not to their eſteem! That is impoſſible. As a reprobate whom they have admitted out of charity, to give her an opportunity of repentance, and ſave her from ruin in another life as well as this; as as reproach to them, which they would keep among themſelves to hide it from the world. Every look would upbraid me, every word inſult my folly. At leaſt conſciouſneſs would take it in that ſenſe, which were equally intolerable.

"I have thus, my dear friend, given you a view of my unhappy life, both to entertain you and eaſe my own heart, by pouring out its griefs into your boſom. If you think me worthy of the like confidence, or that my advice can be of any advantage to you, I ſhall give it with as much ſincerity as I ſhall receive yours with gratitude upon all occaſions; and I promiſe you the moſt inviolable ſecreſy."

CHAP.

CHAP. XII.

One ſtory generally introduces another. The true object of female attention to dreſs. Common conſequences of faſhionable intimacy, and female friendſhip, with the ſecret of making a right uſe of a ſhoeing-horn.

THE other lady, who had liſtened to her friend's ſtory with the ſtrongeſt attention, was ſome time before ſhe made any anſwer. At length, with a down-caſt look and heavy ſigh, "I ſhould make a bad return, dear madam, (ſaid ſhe) for the good opinion you have ſhewn of me, could I harbour any doubt of you, or refuſe to comply with any thing you deſire. My unhappy ſtory has few circumſtances; and O that the ſequel of it may have fewer yet! Thoſe in which it differs from your's are all to my diſadvantage. The principles of virtue were inculcated on my opening mind with the tendereſt care, and enforced to my imitation by the moſt lively example. I paſſed the moſt dangerous ſeaſon of life, when ripening youth too often makes paſſion an over-match for reaſon, without reproach; and at laſt ran head-long into ruin, with my eyes open.

"You muſt wonder at a conduct ſo contrary to every motive that ſhould influence a creature endowed with the faineſt glimmering of reaſon. But the cauſe of it may eaſily be traced. Public fame had flattered me into an opinion of my own beauty, and many examples juſtified my ambition of riſing to the moſt exalted fortune on the merit of that alone. Yielding therefore to the impulſe of vanity, I thought of nothing but improving that advantage; and, under the appearance of ſtudying my own pleaſure, laid ſnares, with the moſt anxious and mercenary aſſiduity, for every man whom I thought proper for my purpoſe: the wretched toil to which the greateſt part of our ſex devote the prime of life.

" I proceeded for ſome time on this plan, when the gentleman with whom I am at preſent connected, took it into his head to ſingle me out for the object of his gallantry. Though his being a married man cut off all hopes of ſucceſs in my favourite ſcheme, there was ſomething ſo flattering to my vanity in being admired by a perſon of his rank, that I could not reſiſt the pleaſure of it, eſpecially as I meant nothing criminal, and this kind of gallantry had the ſanction of faſhion.

" As the general intercourſe kept up among people of diſtinction had been improved into ſome degree of intimacy between this gentleman's wife and me, the aſſiduity with which he paid attention to me upon all occaſions, for ſome time paſſed for the effect of familiarity and friendſhip. But whether ſhe ſuſpected the truth, and therefore thought proper to ſhew a coolneſs to me, or that conſciouſneſs of deſerving it made me think ſo, I at length began to fancy that ſhe ſlighted me; and being confirmed in that opinion, by finding myſelf omited in a general invitation of her acquaintances, I conceived the moſt violent reſentment againſt her; to wreak which in the ſevereſt manner I affected to liſten to her huſband's addreſſes with pleaſure, and gave reaſon for ſuſpicions which were foreign to my heart, though at the ſame time I was not inſenſible that by ſuch a conduct I ran the hazard of defeating my original deſign; but this I vainly thought I could remedy when I pleaſed, by breaking off all connection with him as ſoon as I had gratified my pique againſt her.

" There is nothing more dangerous than liſtening to the allurements of vice, though with the moſt innocent intention. It is like playing on the brink of a precipice. By making the idea familiar, it takes off its terrors, and brings on a falſe ſecurity that generally betrays into a fall.

" I expected that my admirer's wife would ſoon perceive this change in my conduct, and by breaking with me entirely give me an opportunity of triumphing over her in the moſt mortifying manner, by ſhewing the moſt ſovereign contempt for what made her ſo unhappy.

But

But inſtead of this ſhe continued to treat me with the ſame if not greater intimacy than ever, and convinced me that the offence I had taken had been all groundleſs.

" Whether ſhe did this to retort my ſchemes, and make me look deſpicable even in my own eyes, or in hopes of ſhaming me into a proper ſenſe of my behaviour by the contraſt between it and hers, I cannot ſay; but this I know that it had the former effect moſt fully, and would certainly have ſucceeded in the latter alſo, had it not been for one of thoſe accidents which, as you juſtly obſerved, ſhew the inſignificancy of human wiſdom, and rule our lives.

" A gentleman of diſtinguiſhed rank and fortune, but who was far advanced in years, and in every reſpect an object of averſion and contempt, unhappily took a liking to me. The advantges of ſuch a match dazzled the eyes of all my friends, who exerted their utmoſt influence to induce me to conſent to it. But tho' it was the very object I had all along had in view, and exceeded the moſt ſanguine hope my vanity had ever formed, when it came to the teſt, my heart rebelled, and I could not bring myſelf to barter happineſs for grandeur.

" Though I gave this anſwer in the moſt determined manner, and ſupported it with reaſons impoſſible to be refuted, my lover would not deſiſt on the contrary, he ſeemed determined to weary me out by his importnnity, and, to ſecond it, engaged the authority of my family, on the ſtrength of which he always urged his odious ſuit with the moſt inſulting confidence.

" The contraſt between this conduct, and the reſpectful inſinuating addreſs of my former admirer was too ſtriking. I began to hearken to him with more pleaſure than ever; and, from a confirmed perſuaſion that I could not be happy with the other, raſhly concluded that I muſt be ſo with him, as if the alternative was unavoidable.

" As my ancient ſuitor had ſettled his bargain with my friends, he looked upon me as ſecure, and therefore made no ſecret of the affair. The moment it

came to my lover's ears, he expoſtulated with me upon it in the moſt paſſionate and tender terms; and though I had yet formed no reſolutions which made it neceſſary for me to account for my conduct to him, I held the other in ſuch averſion, that in the weakneſs of my heart I could not conceal it; nor my unhappineſs and apprehenſions from the authority and importunities of my friends.

" He was too well verſed in the ſcience of intrigue not to take immediate advantage of this. He condoled with me on the cruelty of ſuch a perſecution, enumerated the many inſtances in which it had been unhappily ſucceſsful; and heightened my diſlike of the other into abhorrence, by ſeveral anecdotes of his character which I was before a ſtranger to. Nor did he ſtop here. As he was intimate with his rival, he inſtantly exerted all his art to urge him to preſs his ſuit with me more earneſtly, imputing my refuſal to coyneſs which wanted only to be wooed, and turning his baſhfulneſs, as he called it, into ridicule.

" While he ſtimulated him in this manner, he made me believe that he uſed every argument which generoſity and honour could ſuggeſt, to diſſuade him from a purſuit that he ſaw was ſo diſagreeable, but all in vain; the other declaring that if I perſiſted much longer, he would have recourſe to the authority of my friends, which they had promiſed to exert at a proper time, when reſiſtance ſhould be out of my power. This ſcheme was too ſucceſsful. Urged on by him, my ſuitor preſſed his addreſſes with redoubled warmth, and enforced them with new offers, which engaged my friends ſtill more ſanguinely in his behalf; and by that means confirmed all my lover had ſaid to me, who aggravated my apprehenſions of compulſion to ſuch a height, fixing the very hour when I was to be ſacrificed to a particular day, on which I had been obliged to accept of an invitation to his country-ſeat, in company with ſome of my neareſt relations, that in the madneſs of affright I liſtened to the propoſals he made me, and conſented to come away with him, perſuaded that, however blameable ſuch a ſtep might be in other caſes, ſelf-preſervation juſtified it in me; ſo that I really

ally ran away from my ſuitor, rather than with my lover.

"The myſtery of this management I was not long unacquainted with. He was ſo proud of the addreſs he had ſhewn in it, that the moment he had me in his power, he could not avoid boaſting of it in the vanity of his heart. This was the firſt thing that awoke me to reflection, though I have ſince had abundant reaſons beſide. The mortification of finding myſelf duped in ſuch a manner, by one whoſe underſtanding I had ever held in too low eſteem, to have any apprehenſions of the kind, with the ridiculouſly vexatious circumſtances which attended my elopement, had ſuch an effect upon me, that I wrote to my friends in the anguiſh of my ſoul, to beg I might be permitted to return and throw myſelf abſolutely upon their mercy in every reſpect but that of being ſacrificed to that odious old creature; but a falſe pride prevented their complying with my requeſt. They concluded, tho' moſt injuriouſly, that my ruin was compleated, and rejected me with diſdain, as a reproach to them.

"I then had no choice left, and was obliged to perſiſt from neceſſity in the crime of folly, as, I am perſuaded, is the caſe of many of thoſe who appear moſt culpable. What will be the conſequence I dare not even divine. This I am determined on: I will not be the ſport of his caprice, carried about like an unneceſſary part of his baggage, only for ſhow, to gratify his vanity at the expence of my ſhame. He ſhall either quit his military life at the end of this campaign, and retire, according to his repeated promiſes and oaths, to ſome place where we ſhall not be known; or I will quit him, and return home at every event. I am entitled to a fortune that will afford me a morſel of bread in ſome country-village, where I may have leiſure enough to repent of my folly; and even that is better than the life I lead now."

CHAP. XIII.

More military matters. Politics on one ſide of the queſtion.

JUST as the lady had concluded her ſtory, my fellow-traveller continued his journey. I therefore left the fair friends together, to compare the errors of their paſt conduct, and confirm each other in their reſolutions of amendment.

The ſuttler, having taken the circuit he intended, arrived at the camp to which he was going without any accident, and delivered his packet into the general's own hand, who running his eye over the contents, "This will do! (ſaid he) This will do! I have long "waited for an opportunity to give them a deciſive "ſtroke, and now I have got it; thanks to my faith-"ful and vigilant agents! Sure no other people ever "were ſo infatuated as to harbour the ſubjects of "their enemies thus in their very boſom, in a time of "open war! They do not preconcert a motion that I "have not notice of. Indeed if it were not for the "intelligence which I receive in this manner, I ſhould "often be at a loſs."

The purport of the intelligence which he had received was, that the adverſe army would be ſo conſiderably weakened, as the next day, by ſeveral detachments, that a general attack might be made almoſt with a certainty of ſucceſs. Such an opportunity was not to be miſſed. He inſtantly ſet about making all the neceſſary preparations, and ſent orders to another general who commanded a ſeparate body of forces, but ſubordinate to him, to ſecond his deſign, by a vigorous attack at the ſame time on the ſide next him. The diſpoſitions he made wore the moſt promiſing aſpect; but, according to the uſual uncertainty of military operations, his whole ſcheme miſcarried. He met with ſo warm a reception from the enemy, who had an opportunity of oppoſing their whole force to him, the other general not attacking at the ſame time, that he was forced to retreat with precipitation and conſiderable

derable loſs, and leave the other, who was juſt then coming up, expoſed to the victorious army, which might have given him a total defeat, had not that been contrary to the general's ſcheme of protracting the war; who therefore, content with repulſing one part of the enemy's forces, permitted the other to retreat without a ſtroke.

This diſappointment inflamed the diſcord which already ſubſiſted between the two generals; the chief alledging, that he ſhould have ſucceeded in his attempt, had his orders been properly obeyed by the other, who retorted the accuſation, and ſaid he was abandoned on purpoſe that he might be cut off, which muſt have been the conſequence had not the enemy miſtaken a retreat, for which he ſaw no neceſſity, for a ſtratagem to draw him in between the two corps, each of which was almoſt equal to his whole army.

The conſequence of this diſagreement is obvious. Each general had his own creatures among the officers, who, openly eſpouſing the cauſe of their patrons, began a kind of civil war among themſelves, which threatened the moſt dangerous effects, had the enemy been intent upon taking the advantage of them.

On my proceeding to take a view of this army, I was ſenſibly ſtruck at the difference between it and that which I had ſeen before. In the other, though a variety of intereſts prevented the various corps of which it was compoſed from holding that friendly intercourſe with each other, that ought to ſubſiſt between men engaged in the ſame cauſe, yet ſtill that jealouſy went no farther than an unſociable diſtance, and never interfered with duty. The men beſide were well provided with the neceſſary appointments of every kind, which preſerved them in that health and vigour indiſpenſably eſſential to ſucceſs.

But here every thing wore a different aſpect. Tho' all the ſubjects of the ſame ſovereign, and therefore united in every view of intereſt, the officers, as I have obſerved, were divided into factions, and embroiled in conſtant quarrels; and the private men ſickly, half-ſtarved, and half-naked; yet under all theſe diſtractions and diſtreſſes, the levity of temper which

characteriſes

characteriſes their nation diſplayed itſelf in its greateſt force; the officers forgetting their animoſity the moment they had put up their ſwords, and chatting together on matters of mirth and amuſement with all the familiarity of friends, till ſome accident revived their diſputes; and the men dancing to divert hunger, and keep them warm, and all venting their reſentment againſt the authors of their ſeveral grievances in a ſcurrilous ſong or lampoon.

While I was making theſe obſervations the night after this miſcarriage, my attention was ſtruck by a converſation which paſſed between two officers on guard, who, having drawn off to ſome diſtance from their men, thought themſelves in no danger of being over-heard, and therefore opened their hearts without reſerve.

"I think, (ſaid one of them whoſe accent ſhewed "him to be a foreigner) that conſidering all "things, we got very well over this affair. Had the "enemy purſued his advantage, I do not know what "might have been the conſequence."

"That is very true, (anſwered the other) it might "have been ſomewhat diſagreeable; but this will al-"ways be the caſe where court favour is put in com-"petition with merit, and rivals joined in command "whoſe emulation is to ſupplant each other, though "at the ruin of the public cauſe; and this is the very "thing that has drawn this war out to ſuch a tedious "length. The general who began it gloriouſly was "immediately removed, to make way for one whoſe "ſole aim was to make a fortune by every iniquitous "and inhuman method of ruining the unhappy coun-"tries which were the ſeat of war, and defrauding the "very army he commanded of their neceſſary appoint-"ments. When his avarice was ſatiated, and the "public clamour grown too loud, he was ſucceeded "by another favourite, though of an oppoſite party, "who was honeſter, it is true, but had leſs military "knowledge, which brought a diſgrace upon the glory "of his country, not paralleled in its annals.

"To retrieve that, neceſſity pointed out the pre-"ſent general, on whoſe activity and valour great

"expectations

" expectations were founded. Nor did he diſappoint
" them. His entrance on the command was ſignalized
" by ſeveral ſucceſsful and glorious exploits, which
" were to prepare the way for more important events;
" but before he had time to put his great deſigns in
" execution, the ſame prevailing influence which had
" ſo unhappily removed the firſt general, and taken
" offence at the preſent alſo, found means to incum-
" ber him with his preſent colleague, and by that
" means ſtopped his progreſs, as you have ſeen this
" day; and where it yet may end, I tremble to
" think."

" Faith, (replied the former) this is but an uncom-
" fortable account I own; but I never trouble my
" head with looking forward. My buſineſs is to fight
" when I am in the field, and live as well as I can upon
" my pay when I am not; and I mind nothing elſe.
" Not but I ſhould like to know ſomething of theſe
" matters too; but I can't tell how it is, I have a
" bad head for politics myſelf, and I never converſe
" with any one who is able and willing to inſtruct me.
" If it be not too much trouble, I ſhould be obliged
" to you for ſome information. It will ſerve to paſs
" away the time, as we have nothing to do. Pray
" what was the cauſe of this war that has coſt us ſo
" many fine armies? And what are we ſent here for?
" For my part, I cannot comprehend it for my life!
" We are marched all this way, I know not for what;
" and loſe our lives I know not how, dying like rotten
" ſheep without any credit to ourſelves or advantage
" to our ſovereign."

" You aſk a queſtion, my friend, (returned the o-
" ther) not eaſy to be anſwered, nor ſafe to be diſ-
" cuſſed, were it poſſible for us to be overheard;
" but as I think there is no danger in that, I will
" ſtrive to give you the beſt account I can of the
" matter.

" The Engliſh and we, you know, are neceſſarily
" enemies, becauſe we obſtruct each other's views.
" If it was not for thoſe head-ſtrong Iſlanders, we
" ſhould long ſince have raiſed the glory of our ſove-
" reign to the higheſt pitch, by the conqueſt of all

" Europe;

" Europe; as, on the other hand, they would engroſs the commerce of the whole world and of courſe become maſters of all the wealth in it, did we not croſs their avaricious views by every poſſible means. In negotiating, we always have the advantage of them; but when we come to war, I do not know how it is, but they ſometimes are hard enough for us.

" As for the preſent war in particular, it took its riſe ſolely from their preſumption and injuſtice. Under pretence of our having forcibly poſſeſſed ourſelves of ſome ſpots of land which belonged to them in the boundleſs deſerts of America, they fell upon our defenceleſs merchants without any previous declaration of war, and took numbers of them in a cowardly pyratical manner.

" Provoked at this inſolence, or monarch in his wrath ſent one of his armies, and conquered an important part of their dominions. Aſtoniſhed at this ſtroke, they ſtood looking at each other in the moſt deſpicable affright, while he proceeded glorioufly in his conqueſts in every part of the globe.

" Their terror was for ſome time ſo great, that they called in a parcel of their mercenary allies, to protect them from his vengeance, which they apprehended would purſue them, even in their own country; not giving themſelves time to conſider, that there was a ſea between them which it was impoſſible for his troops to paſs.

" At length they were rouzed from this ſtate of fear and ſtupefaction into a kind of phrenzy, in which, by ſome ſtrange miſmanagement in our affairs, they not only recovered almoſt all the conqueſts we had made from them, but alſo puſhed their ſucceſs to a length which a Frenchman cannot think of without bluſhing.

" To ballance theſe advantages, and bring them to a proper way of thinking, we are ſent here, where our alliances and the number of our forces encouraged us to hope, that we might make ſuch acquiſitions as on a treaty of peace ſhould be deemed equivalent.

" quivalent to theirs, and exchanged for them. Hi-
" therto matters have not ſucceeded quite ſo well as
" we expected; but ſtill we have gained one great
" point, in making them diſſipate that wealth, which
" is the foundation of their power, in a fruitleſs op-
" poſition to us; a folly that will certainly reduce
" them to beggary, if they perſiſt in it much longer,
" which our monarch knows, and for that reaſon
" continues to carry on the war, even under ſuch ap-
" parent diſadvantages.

CHAP. XIV.

A new ſcheme for carrying on a war. An ill-timed doubt often diſconcerts a good ſtory. Anecdotes of a loyal family. The hiſtory of Sir ARCHIBALD, *and* ZELIDE, *princeſs of* Armenia.

" I AM very much obliged to you for this infor-
" mation, (replied the foreigner) I own I have
" never viewed things in this light before I have in-
" deed felt ſome of the bad conſequences of our want
" of ſucceſs in the ſtoppage of my pay; but I never
" dreamed of the advantages which might attend the
" proſecution of an unſucceſsful war.

" But in the mean time, is there no danger that
" we may be out in our calculation, and ruined firſt?
" By all appearances, the finances of the enemy are in
" a much more flouriſhing way than ours. They pay
" every body punctually, and even enlarge their ex-
" pences every day, in puſhing their good fortune, and
" ſupporting the conqueſts they make."

" And ſo much the worſe for them, (retorted the
" Frenchman) their punctual payments will ſoon leave
" them pennyleſs. Our government acted more pru-
" dently. By refuſing to pay their debts, they kept
" money in their hands to carry on their deſigns,
" which the others will ſoon find themſelves unable
" to do.

" As to their enlarging their expence in ſupporting
" their conqueſts, that is the very thing we deſire.

" We

" We let them conquer only to draw them into more " expence. You cannot think that our mighty monarch " would have permitted their inſolence to have gone " unpuniſhed ſo long, if he had not ſome great end " in view. No! No! Their conqueſts will be their " ruin, take my word for it. As ſoon as they have " exhauſted themſelves by conquering, they will be " glad to give all up for a peace. It has ever been ſo. " It is but ſending an able negotiator to treat with " them, and the work is done; their heads are too " heavy for politics. No! No! their making con- " queſts ſignifies nothing.

" As to what you ſay of our being ruined firſt, that " is all a miſtake. Our king can never be ruined " while there is money, or money's worth, in his do- " minions. It is all his own. He need not ſtoop to flat- " ter his ſubjects to lend; he has power to take. They, " it is true, may poſſibly ſuffer for a time? but what " does that ſignify where the glory of their ſovereign is " concerned? No true Frenchman ever thinks of that. " He leaves ſuch ſelfiſh conſiderations to Engliſh mer- " chants and mechanics. He is above them.

" I ſay, *for a time*, becauſe our reſources are all " within ourſelves. Let us be never ſo exhauſted by " war, a few years of peace never fail to reſtore us; " and we have the pleaſure to reflect, that the atten- " tion paid to our intereſts then always makes amends " for what we ſuffered before; whereas our enemies " think of no ſuch thing. The moment they get a " peace, which their eagerneſs for is ſeldom lets them " have patience to wait for on good terms, they fall " to wrangling among themſelves, and never trouble " their heads about the good of the public, till they " have occaſion to call for aſſiſtance again; ſo that " their affairs are always better managed in war than " in peace, even in reſpect to the matters moſt foreign " to war.

" The reaſon of this is, that their governors not " having any direct property in the goods of their ſub- " jects, they think it not worth their while to take " any care about them; whereas with us, all being " in our ſovereign's power he looks upon them

" as

" as his own, and ſtudies their improvement accord-
" ingly. Of this there might innumerable inſtances
" be given in all the articles of commerce, the bal-
" lance of which we conſtantly continue to bring into
" our favour, in peace, by ſome means or other, in
" leſs time than they wreſt it from us in war."

" All this may be very true for aught I know, (ſaid the
" foreigner) but one thing I am convinced of, which
" is, that however conducive this power may be to
" the monarch's glory, it were better for his ſubjects
" that he ſhould be without it. I have experienced
" both caſes, and therefore am the better able to
" judge."

" If ſo, (anſwered the Frenchman with ſome tart-
" neſs) I wonder why your countrymen chuſe to come
" and fix themſelves among us! Few people leave a
" place they like for one they do not."

" Very true, (replied the foreigner gravely) they
" ſeldom do. But there may be circumſtances to in-
" fluence ſuch a choice. I have heard this glanced
" at more than once; and in ſuch a manner, that I
" had difficulty to refrain from taking notice of it.
" I am not captious in my temper; but ſtill I cannot
" bear inſinuations injurious to my country. For this
" reaſon as I eſteem you, and conſequently deſire your
" good opinion, give me leave to relate a few of the
" particulars of my own caſe, which, I imagine, will
" make you view the matter in a different light, from
" what you ſeem to have done hitherto; and convince
" you of the injuſtice of ſuch reflections for the fu-
" ture; nor ſhall I treſpaſs on your patience long.

" You are not a ſtranger to the revolutions which
" have happened in the Britiſh government. I
" will not enter into a diſcuſſion of the power which
" the people of England have on many occaſions ex-
" erciſed over their ſovereigns. That part of the
" Britiſh dominions in which I was born has ever been
" remarkable for the contrary principles; our un-
" ſhaken loyalty having always been proof to tempta-
" tion, and even to tyranny.

" In this antient monarchy my anceſtors enjoyed
" diſtinguiſhed honours, before the families of ma-

" ny

" ny of the preſent ſovereigns of Europe had emerged " from barbariſm and obſcurity. Our poſſeſſions " were extenſive; and if nature had denied the ener- " vating delicacies of luxury, heaven made ample a- " mends by the number and virtue of our vaſſals, " whoſe valour, guided by the loyalty of their lords, " often ſupported their ſovereign's throne in the dire " conflicts of ambition, the ſtruggles which the untam- " ed ſons of ſavage liberty made againſt law and rule.

" The virtuous actions of our anceſtors are handed " down for imitation; nor is the ſacred record diſ- " continued, till a ſeries of unworthy deeds makes " the degenerate poſterity bluſh at the upbraiding " compariſon. Doubt not therefore the tale which I " am going to relate; nor think it to be the fiction of " vanity or imagination. The reverend ſire has ſtill " delivered it invariably to his attentive ſons, nor " has a ſyllable been altered in the courſe of ſo many " generations.

" Our fame was not unknown in foreign lands. Wherever the ſhrill trumpet called the warriors forth to arms, our banners waved the foremoſt in the field; and trophies, won by feats of hardieſt proweſs, graced our ſocial halls.

" We had proceeded in this honourable path for many ages, when holy Lewis, glowing with pious zeal, undertook to deliver the ſacred repoſitories of the bleſſed ſaints, the places hallowed by the foot- ſteps of our Lord, from the profanation of infidels. Fired at the news of ſuch a glorious deſign, the heir of our illuſtrious houſe led forth the choſen youths of all our hills, to fight the battles of the faith. The name of their chief prepared a welcome for them, and juſtified the choice which Lewis made of youthful Archibald, to lead the van in all his armies, after he had dub'd him his own knight.

" The unhappy event of this great deſign is too well known. I ſhall therefore confine myſelf to what immediately concerns this my moſt honoured progeni- tor. During the ſtruggles which Lewis made with the malevolence of fortune, the actions of ſir Archi-

bald

bald made him the terror of the hoſts of the infidels; at the ſame time that his exemplary virtues were a reproach to the looſer manners of his fellow-ſoldiers. In an excurſion which he made one day in queſt of intelligence, fate directed his ſteps to the banks of a rivulet in the neighbourhood of the Saracen camp, the beauty of which tempted him to trace its courſe along the woody vale.

" He had not proceeded far, when the ſounds of female voices ſtruck his ear. The ſongs with which they filled the winding valley, declared the innocence and happineſs of their hearts. He liſtened for a while; and then as he was a truly chaſte and courteous knight, was turning about to retire, for fear of intruding on their privacy, when a ſhriek of affright told him his aſſiſtance was neceſſary to them. He heſitated not a moment; but, ruſhing forward, ſaw that a troop of the marauders who ſwarmed around the camp of Lewis, and diſhonoured the chriſtian name with their atrocious crimes, had ſurpriſed a band of helpleſs females, and having diſperſed their feeble guard of eunuchs, were carrying them forcibly away. He knew their danger in the hands of ſuch worſe than brutal ruffians; and proclaiming his own name in a voice that ſhook the hills, ran forward to their reſcue.

" Awed at the well-known name, they ſeemed to pauſe; but their leader ſeeing that ſir Archibald was alone and on foot, for when he firſt heard the voices he had left his horſe with his men, that he might not diſturb them as he advanced to liſten more diſtinctly, waved his hand to his aſſociates to follow, and clapping ſpurs to his horſe's ſides was out of ſight in a moment. But all did not eſcape ſo eaſily; the well-aimed javelin of ſir Archibald pierced the hindermoſt as he had turned himſelf for flight, and brought him lifeleſs to the ground. The active knight inſtantly ſeized the ſteed of the fallen caitif, and vaulting nimbly on him rode after the raviſhers, whom he ſoon over-took, the ſtruggles of the females impeding their flight, and their cries directing his purſuit. The villains at firſt taking him for their companion avoided him not, nor

ſtood

ſtood on their defence; but the deaths of the two firſt of their number, who fell within the reach of his ſword, convinced them of their error, and that it was impoſſible for them to fly from him.

"Cuſtom had inured them to danger, and deſpair now made them valiant. Their number alſo againſt his ſingle arm gave them a proſpect of ſucceſs. They let go the women therefore, and forming themſelves into a troop bore all together upon him. But he diſdained to wait for their aſſault; and ruſhing furiouſly into the midſt of them, for ſome time maintained the unequal combat, and ballanced their numbers by his valour. Five of their bodies now lay breathleſs round him, when his horſe, pierced to the heart with a ſpear, fell to the ground ſo ſuddenly, that all his agility and ſtrength were not ſufficient to diſengage him from him. In this ſituation he expected nothing leſs than inſtant death, when all at once the aſſailants turned their backs, and ſought their ſafety in flight.

"Surpriſed at this, ſir Archibald looked round, and ſaw his faithful men galloping up toward him. They had heard his voice when he firſt called to the ruffians, and imagining that he wanted their aſſiſtance advanced with ſpeed by the ſide of the rivulet, till they found the wretch whom he had pierced with his javelin; alarmed at the ſight of whom they doubled their haſte, and happily came up time enough to ſave their lord.

"The firſt care of ſir Archibald was to ſearch for the women, whom it was difficult to find, their fright having made them hide themſelves the moment they had been let go by the ruffians. At length, however, the diligence of his men diſcovered them all but one, the loſs of whom the reſt deplored in the moſt paſſionate terms. Sir Archibald concluding that ſhe muſt have been carried off by ſome of the raviſhers, while the reſt ſtopped to attack him, was at a loſs what to do. It was in vain to think of overtaking them without ſome guide to direct his purſuit, and whom to get he knew not.

"In this perplexity he bethought himſelf of trying whether ſome intelligence might not be gained among thoſe who had fallen by his ſword, if they all were

were not as yet quite dead. He was not diſappointed. From one of them he learned their place of rendezvous; and that their leader had borne away his prey, as ſir Archibald had conjectured. The generous knight was alarmed at her danger, and, ordering two of his men to conduct the diſconſolate damſels back to the Saracen camp, ſet off himſelf with the reſt in ſearch of her.

" The place to which he was directed was a cave in the darkeſt receſs of a wood, at a conſiderable diſtance from him. The day was now far ſpent, and the way ſo difficult to be found, that it was night before they reached the cavern. Sir Archibald waited not to demand entrance, but drawing his ſword ruſhed boldly in. Heaven ſeemed to have delayed him to the moment that ſhould make his coming moſt critical. Inflamed with brutal paſſion, the miſcreant, when he could not perſuade the damſel to compliance, had reſolved to gratify his baſe deſires by force. Her cries reached the ear of ſir Archibald as he entered the cave, and directed him to her reſcue; which he effected juſt as her ſtrength was exhauſted in the ſtruggle, and ſhe lay a defenceleſs prey to the ſpoiler. With one ſtroke he ſevered the wretch's head from his body; when, raiſing the aſtoniſhed maiden from the ground, he ſtrove to reſtore her ſpirits by the moſt tender and encouraging aſſurances of ſafety and protection.

" At firſt ſhe threw her eyes wildly round the dreary cave, and, filled with the horror of the ſcenes ſhe had juſt gone through, could ſcarcely believe her ſenſes that ſhe was delivered. At length recovering power to ſpeak, " What man, or rather what angel art thou" (ſaid ſhe in the Saracen tongue, fixing her eyes upon him as he ſtood without his helmet, which he had pulled off when he had firſt raiſed her from the ground) " whom heaven has thus miraculouſly ſent to " ſave me from ruin? The benefit is ſo great, that I " had rather think the latter, as the obligation is too " much to owe to man."

" Lady (anſwered he in the ſame language which " he had learned in the war) I am a man! a ſinful " man,

" man, who knows it is his duty to ſuccour virtue in " diſtreſs."

" A man! (replied ſhe earneſtly) Say then of what " lineage and country art thou come, that I may ſtudy " the moſt acceptable reward for thy courteſy and " valour!"

" Thou ſeeſt before thee (returned he) lady, a " Chriſtian knight, whoſe faith makes virtue a duty " and looks not for reward."

" A Chriſtian! Gracious Heaven! (exclaimed the " lady, as recovering herſelf after a long pauſe) Pardon, " courteous ſtranger, the ravings of a diſtracted brain! " No reward can return the obligation I am under to " you, and yet I muſt ſue for more; I muſt entreat " you to conduct me directly to the Saracen camp, " and reſtore me to my diſtreſſed parent, who now la- " ments the loſs of his only child.

" Talk not of rewards, moſt beauteous lady, (ſaid " the knight gazing in rapture on her) the pleaſure of " doing you a ſervice is its own reward. All I require " is to know your name; and O! tell me, I conjure " you, (continued he, falling on his knees before her) " if it be poſſible for a ſoldier of no ignoble birth or " fame, to make the offer of his honeſt heart accept- " able to you."

" Brave knight (anſwered ſhe) an heart like thine is " worthy of the moſt exalted maid's acceptance; but " there are inſuperable obſtacles to thy deſire. As for " my name it would avail you nought to know it. Let " me adjure you therefore by that virtue which your " ſoul reveres, to deſiſt from any farther enquiries " about me; and conveying me to the camp of your " enemies, there to leave me to my fate."

" Thy will, O beauteous arbitreſs of my deſtiny, " (replied he) is a law to thy devoted ſervant. I o- " bey thee; but firſt permit me to pour out the ſul- " neſs of my ſoul."—Then taking her fair hand as he kneeled before her, and holding it between his, " Ac- " cept my homage, ſovereign lady of my heart! (ſaid " he) and receive me from this hour for thy true and " conſtant knight; and by this ſacred pledge I ſwear,

(touching

" (touching her hand devoutly with his lips) no o-
" ther dame ſhall ever raiſe a wiſh in my breaſt contra-
" ry to the faith I here plight unto thee."——

" And in return I promiſe thee, moſt valiant and
" right gentle knight, (ſaid ſhe) that the remembrance
" of thy courteſy ſhall never be erazed from my grate-
" ful heart; nor any other man ſupplant thee in that
" regard which it is lawful for a virgin to feel for her
" deliverer."

" Comforted by this kind promiſe, ſir Archibald took her by the hand, and leading her to the mouth of the cavern, mounted her behind him on his able ſteed, and bore her without accident to the Saracen camp.

" As ſoon as they came to the moſt advanced guard ſhe diſmounted, and pulling a coſtly jewel from her breaſt, " Wear this (ſaid ſhe tenderly) in remem-
" brance of one who will never forget her generous
" deliverer."

" I accept, deareſt lady, (anſwered he bending his
" knee to the earth) a gift made precious by thy hand,
" and promiſe to wear it as a badge of thy authority
" over my heart; as thou, if I have found favour in
" thy ſight, wilt alſo condeſcend to take this ring from
" thy ſervant. My honoured mother beſtowed it
" with her dying benediction, and enjoined me never
" to give it till I could truly give my heart along with
" it."— She kindly took the pledge of his love, and put it on her hand directly; then, bidding him adieu, advanced alone to the guard, who inſtantly conducted her where ſhe commanded them.

" Sir Archibald ſtood for ſome time, unable to ſtir; his eyes followed her as far as he could ſee through the ſhades of night, and he liſtened to her ſteps till the ſounds inſenſibly died away from his ear. Awaking at length as from a trance, " Unhappy Archibald (ſaid
" he, ſtriking his hand upon his grief-ſwollen breaſt)
" to what misfortunes has thy wayward fate reſerved
" thee? Never till this day did my heart feel the
" power of beauty. I laughed at love, and called his
" bondage folly; but amply has the tyrant now a-
" venged his cauſe, and pierced me with his ſharpeſt,

" moſt

" moſt envenomed lance. Ye maids of Caledonia, " who oft have wept your ſlighted charms, and called " the heart of Archibald inſenſible, now triumph in " his fall. He loves without a ray of hope to promiſe " him ſucceſs."

" Thus did he conſume the remaining part of the night in fruitleſs lamentation, till his followers at the approach of morning reminded him, that it was neceſſary for him to return to the chriſtian camp.

" From this hour his heart was a ſtranger to happineſs. Did he know even who the object of his wiſhes was, he might at leaſt have pleaſed himſelf with forming imaginary ſchemes for obtaining her love; but her command, which he moſt religiouſly obſerved, precluded him from making any inquiries about her, as his men's ignorance of the Saracen language had alſo prevented their learning any thing from the damſels whom they had conducted to the camp.

CHAP. XV.

The hiſtory of Sir ARCHIBALD, *and* ZELIDE, *princeſs of* Armenia, *continued.*

" BUT though his private peace was thus poiſoned, it ſlackened not his attention to the duties of war. On the contrary, the troubles of his mind making him weary of life, he eagerly ſought every occaſion of loſing it with honour. In the laſt unfortunate action between Lewis and the Saracens, Sir Archibald, at the head of his bonny lads, charged the infidels with ſuch impetuoſity, that he broke into the main body of their army; and had he been followed with equal ſpirit by the other ſquadrons under his command, might poſſibly have altered the fate of that unhappy day. But envy, which always follows ſuperior merit, had inflamed the hearts of certain French lords, who thought themſelves eclipſed by his fame, to ſuch a degree againſt him, that when they ſaw him break like a torrent into the battle of the enemy, inſtead of following his ſteps with emulative virtue, they baſely drew back,

back, and gave the infidels an opportunity of ſurrounding him, and his few brave men.

"Thrice did he penetrate ſo far through their numbers, as to ſeize the imperial ſtandard; but the multitude, whom dread of ſuch a diſgrace made throw themſelves deſperately between him and it, as often bore him back. At length, collecting all his force for one laſt effort, he burſt in irreſiſtibly among them, and ſeizing it with one hand had raiſed the other to ſmite the chief, whoſe vigorous gripe with-held it from him, when a ſtone hurled by a daſtard ſlave who dared not approach within the reach of his ſword, felled him to the ground. The baſe herd inſtantly ruſhed in, and were ready to wreck their cowardly revenge upon his defenceleſs body, when the chief, who reſpected valour, though in an enemy, and judged by the richneſs of his armour that he muſt be ſome perſon of note, whoſe ranſom would well reward his humanity, interpoſed; and, diſcovering that he ſtill breathed, ordered him to be removed to his own tent, and there taken proper care of. With ſir Archibald fell the ſpirit of the chriſtian army, and left the infidels an eaſy and compleat victory.

"He had not been long in the tent of the chief, when, by the aſſiſtance of thoſe into whoſe care he had been given, he began to recover his ſenſes. Opening his eyes he looked around in ſilent aſtoniſhment, for ſome time; then turning to the attendants who were buſied about him, he aſked them courteouſly where he was, and to whom indebted for ſuch friendly treatmeut; but they laid their hands upon their mouths, to let him know that they muſt not converſe with him. This increaſed his perplexity. The tent, and the habit of thoſe who adminiſtered ſuch kind aſſiſtance to him, ſhewed him that he was in the hands of the enemy; but that very aſſiſtance, ſo contrary to their uſual practice, heightened his aſtoniſhment ſtill more and more.

"The next morning he found himſelf ſo well recovered, that he deſired permiſſion to wait upon his benefactor to return him thanks, and learn what ranſom he demanded, which he doubted not but Lewis

would readily pay. The chief received him courteouſly, and informing him of the total defeat of the chriſtian army, gave him to underſtand that his hopes of liberty were at an end.

" The effect which this account had on him was eaſily perceived. The manly fortitude that ſat upon his brow before, gave place to liſtleſs dejection. " Thy will be done, O God!" (exclaimed he with a loud ſigh) then fixed his eyes upon the ground.

" The chief, who imagined that his grief aroſe from the thought of his captivity, encouraged him with aſſurances that he ſhould not receive unworthy treatment. But ſir Archibald ſoon ſhewed him that his diſtreſs aroſe from a more exalted motive. " Think not, moſt courteous and noble lord" (ſaid he, raiſing his eyes ſlowly from the ground and fixing them on the chief, with a look that ſhewed a ſoul overburthened but not broken by woe) " think not " that my grief is for myſelf. Liberty is the jewel " of every virtuous ſoul; without it the ſentiments of " honour, generoſity, and courage, are a torture. " But ſtill I mourn from a more extenſive cauſe. I " mourn the misfortunes of my royal maſter, the " princely and pious Lewis. I mourn the defeat of " the armies of the Lord. I am but a worm, an a- " tom in the creation, unworthy of a thought in ſuch " a ſcene of ruin."

" The chief was ſtruck with ſuch greatneſs of ſoul, and, repeating his kind conſolation, demanded who ſir Archibald was, and what rank he held in the army of Lewis. But the high-minded knight had formed the reſolution of concealing his name and quality, to hide the diſgrace which he thought his captivity would reflect upon his noble houſe and country. " No! (ſaid he to himſelf) never ſhall it be ſaid that " ſir Archibald is a ſlave! that a noble *Scot* was forc- " ed to bend the knee to barbarous infidels. Let me " periſh unknown, and let my reproach die with " me." ——— Then, as if recollecting himſelf, " I am " no more than a private knight, O noble lord, (an- " ſwered he) whom a deſire of fame brought to this " fatal

" fatal war. I was not born in the ligeance of royal " Lewis, nor bore any high rank in his armies. I " led a few brave youths, the followers of my way- " ward fortune, to the field, who all, as I ſuppoſe, " have fallen with honour; and O! that I had ſhared " their glorious fate; but I was unworthy, and am " reſerved for ſlavery."

" There is a ſympathy between noble ſouls, which ſoon unites them. The chief, who before admired the valour, now loved the virtue of his captive. He directly received him into his intimacy, and was ſo ſtruck with the charms of his converſation, that he opened to him all the ſecrets of his ſoul. As they ſat together one day, beguiling the heat of the noon-tide hours, in pleaſing diſcourſe, the chief pauſed for ſome time as if loſt in thought; then ſtarting in a kind of tranſport, " It ſhall be ſo; (ſaid he) 'tis " Heaven inſpires the thought." ——— Then addreſſing himſelf to ſir Archibald, " *Selim*, (that was " the name he had given him) thou muſt go and " plead the cauſe of thy friend. That eloquence " which can charm the fierceſt paſſions of the ſoul to " peace, can ſurely kindle the more gentle ones of " pity and deſire. I love, moſt warmly love; but the " object of my wiſhes is inſenſible to my pain, nor " will liſten to my intreaties. Go then and ſoften " her heart, paint my paſſion in proper colours, " and teach her to make a juſt return to it. At- " tempt not to diſſwade me from the thought. It " is Heaven that inſpires; and I will purſue it."

" Sir Archibald, who knew by ſad experience that love is an over-match for reaſon, anſwered, that, far from contradicting his will, he was ready to obey him in any thing he ſhould command; and only deſired to know how his weak endeavours were to be applied. The chief embracing him tenderly, " I will inform you of " every thing, (ſaid he) and will not doubt of your " ſucceſs. You muſt know that, about three moons " ſince, the guard of one of the advanced poſts " brought to my tent a damſel moſt richly attired, " who they ſaid had come to them juſt before the

" morning-watch, and required to be conducted to " the commander of the night. The moment ſhe en- " tered and caſt her eyes upon me, " Achmet, (ſaid " ſhe, with an air of dignity that awed my ſoul) " lead me to the pavilion of thy maſter. I am Zelide, " his daughter, who was this day ſurprized by the " enemy, as I walked along the banks of the rivulet; " and have now recovered my liberty in a manner not " neceſſary to be told.

" I was ſo dazzled at the ſight of her beauty, for " ſhe had no veil on, that I was ſome time before I " had power to make her any anſwer. At length, " proſtrating myſelf at her feet, Forgive, O beaute- " ous princeſs, (ſaid I) the ignorance of thy ſlaves, " who have not paid the reſpect due to thy ſublime " ſtate." ——Riſe, (anſwered ſhe) and lead me to " my father; I forgive every thing."——

" Encouraged by this condeſcenſion, I ventured " to riſe, and taking her hand, which ſhe graciouſly " held to me, conducted her to the pavilion of the " Armenian monarch. The joy that her return " raiſed can no more be deſcribed than the ſituation " of my heart. All was tumult, extacy, and mad- " neſs.

" As ſoon as I had delivered her into her father's " hands, I prepared to retire, when calling to me, " Stay, Achmet, (ſaid the inraptured monarch) and " receive the reward of thy ſervice. I have ſworn " to give Zelide to the man who ſhould reſcue her " out of the hands of the raviſhers, and reſtore her " to me. Her maidens have told me what noble ſpi- " rit you exerted for her. Here, Zelide, take an " huſband who has deſerved you."

" I proſtrated myſelf at his feet in tranſport, and " embraced his knees, unable to expreſs the joy of " my full heart; when the princeſs replied to her fa- " ther, " The merits of Achmet are ſufficiently " great, without aſſuming thoſe of another. I owe " my liberty to an unknown hand."

" It is impoſſible to expreſs what I felt at hearing " her ſay this. The manner in which ſhe ſpoke con-

" vinced

" vinced me that her heart was not inclined in my " favour; and I knew the fondneſs of her father too " well, to think that he would put any conſtraint up- " on her inclinations. However, I yielded to the " impulſe of my paſſion, and throwing myſelf at her " feet, " Revoke not, O beauteous princeſs, (ſaid " I) the gracious words of my lord; nor reject an " heart that is devoted to thee."—

" Deſiſt, Achmet, (ſaid the monarch ſternly) my " haſty vow is ſaved; and the hands of Zelide to be " obtained only on the terms propoſed before."— " Awed at theſe words, I retired in dejection equal to " the height of my late ſhort-lived hopes; and from " that day has my heart been a prey to deſpair.

" The aſſiſtance which I now require from you is " this: In pious gratitude to Heaven, for her eſcape " from bondage, Zelide has obtained permiſſion from " her father to relieve the captives of the war. For " this purpoſe they are ordered to repair to a certain " place before her pavilion, where ſhe ſees them through " the ſilken curtains of her tent, and frequently con- " verſes with ſuch as have any thing particular in their " appearance to excite her curioſity. Thither you " ſhall go; and I promiſe myſelf that you will plead " my cauſe with ſucceſs, if it ſo happens that ſhe en- " ters into converſation with you."

" Had the chief attended to the effect which his ſtory had upon ſir Archibald, he would not have been ſo ready to ſend him as his advocate. Every circumſtance convinced him that the princeſs was the object of his own love, whom he had deſpaired of diſcovering, and filled him with emotions which he could not ſuppreſs. Recovering himſelf, however, time enough to eſcape the obſervations of Achmet, whoſe mind was too intent upon his own ſtory to give much heed to any thing elſe, " It is my duty, (ſaid he) " to obey thy commands; and diffident though I am " of the abilities which your partiality beſtows upon " me, I am yet ready to undertake any thing which " you think can conduce to your happineſs."

" Achmet again embraced him, and informing him at what time and where he ſhould wait upon Zelide next morning, left him, while he went himſelf to attend his ſovereign, in the courſe of his duty.

" No ſooner was ſir Archibald alone than he began to reflect on the commiſſion which he had undertaken, and the diſtreſſing ſituation he was in. In the firſt emotions of his high ſpirit he blamed himſelf for not having avowed his paſſion, and aſſerted his prior claim; but a conſideration of his unhappy ſtate immediately checked this raſh thought, and the deſire of meeting the dear object of his love at any rate determined him to go, and truſt the event to fate. " What " ſhall I do? (ſaid he) Shall I plead for the love of " Achmet and deſtroy my own hopes? Or ſhall I be- " tray his confidence, and ſpeak only for myſelf?" Then pauſing a while, " I will do neither; (he con- " tinued) if nature forbids the former, honour equal- " ly oppoſes the latter. Never ſhall it be ſaid that " ſir Archibald broke faith with man. I will repre- " ſent his love with fidelity; I will declare my own " with honeſt truth, and leave the deciſion to her- " ſelf."——Pleaſed with this determination, his heart grew lighter; and the thought of meeting Zelide filled him with joy, to which he had been long a ſtranger.

CHAP. XVI.

Continuation of the hiſtory of Sir ARCHIBALD *and* ZELIDE, *princeſs of* Armenia.

" HAVING received his laſt inſtructions from Achmet, ſir Archibald went at the appointed hour next morning to the royal pavilion. Though he was habited in the humble weeds of a ſlave, there was ſomething in his appearance that ſpoke his noble birth, and prejudiced every heart in his favour. His ſtature was above the common ſize of men, his limbs turned in the exacteſt ſymmetry of ſtrength and beauty.

ty. His auborn locks flowed in ringlets to the middle of his back, and his dark-blue eyes ſparkled with ſenſibility and manly ſpirit; while a gloom of melancholy, ſuited to his preſent ſtation, ſoftened their fire, and threw a pallid veil over the ruddy bloom which youth had painted on his cheeks.

" He had not ſtood long with his eyes fixed on the ground, and his heart throbbing with the moſt anxious emotions, when an eunuch came to diſtribute the relief which the princeſs ſent to the captives, ordering ſuch of them as ſhe had pointed out to him to advance to the ſide of her tent, that ſhe might enquire into the nature of their particular diſtreſſes.

" The ſtate of ſir Archibald's heart, when the eunuch paſſed him by unnoticed, may be eaſily conceived. All his high hopes ſunk at once. " She " knows me not! (ſaid he to himſelf) or ſhe ſcorns " to know me! Miſtaken Achmet! to think that I " could have any influence upon her."

" He continued theſe melancholy reflections while the princeſs was examining ſome of the other captives, and was departing with them, when the eunuch beckoned to him to advance to the tent. His emotions now were ſtronger than he could bear. He ſcarce had power to obey the ſummons. As ſoon as he approached the curtain, " Chriſtian, (ſaid a voice from " behind it) how long haſt thou been a captive and " to whom?"

" Moſt gracious princeſs, (anſwered he trembling " and in agitation, that almoſt deprived him of ut- " terance) for ſo I am inſtructed to addreſs you, I loſt " my liberty in the late battle that proved ſo fatal to " the unhappy Lewis; and my poor ſervices belong " to the illuſtrious Achmet."

" To Achmet! (replied ſhe) Great honour muſt " he have acquired by the conqueſt; and ſhould treat " ſuch a captive as thou appeareſt to be with uncom- " mon courteſy!"

" The honour of Achmet (returned he) wants not " ſo mean an addition. Thy ſlave was the captive of " an hoſt. As for my treatment, it is that of a man.

" An heart that is ſoftened with love like Achmet's, " cannot want the gentleſt virtues of humanity."

" Thou ſpeakeſt of that paſſion (ſaid the princeſs) " with a voice of ſympathy. I ſuppoſe thy own heart " is not free from it, and that the loſs of thy liberty " is imbittered by that of a wife or miſtreſs in thy na- " tive land."

" Thy ſlave is not married, moſt gracious princeſs, " (anſwered he) nor had my heart felt the power of " love before I ſaw theſe fatal plains."

" Then it ſhould ſeem (continued ſhe) that ſome of " our beauties have ſubdued you to him. How long " have you born his yoke, and who has bent your " ſtubborn neck to it?

" The captivity of my heart, O ſovereign lady, " (anſwered he) is ſcarce three moons old; but the " particular ſeverity of it has made that time an age. " To cut off every hope, the very name of the perſon " whoſe chains I wear is hidden from me in impene- " trable darkneſs."

" That's hard, indeed; (ſaid ſhe) but true forti- " tude is above deſpair. Perhaps you may find her yet. " Come juſt at the cloſe of evening to this place, " and you will meet a perſon who will inform you of " ſtrange things; but mention not a word of this to " Achmet. Adieu! Be diſcreet, be reſolute, and be " happy."

" The ſurprize with which this converſation ſtruck ſir Archibald was ſo great, that he more than once queſtioned himſelf whether it muſt not be only an illuſive dream. Satisfied, however, at length, that it was real, he retired to his own quarter, among the attendants of Achmet, till his emotions ſhould ſubſide, and he could recollect himſelf ſufficiently to appear before him without danger of diſcovering what had happened. He threw himſelf in a corner of the tent, and covering himſelf with a carpet that he might not be diſturbed, lay motionleſs and loſt in thought. He had not lain long when two of the domeſtic ſlaves of Achmet, natives of Greece, came into the tent, and not perceiving that any perſon was preſent, entered into a converſation upon murdering their lord, and flying into their

their own country with the booty which they ſhould be able to plunder in the confuſion cauſed by his death. After conſidering upon ſeveral methods, they at length agreed to poiſon him in a bowl of ſherbet, which one of them, who was his cup-bearer, undertook to give him that very evening, while the other ſhould pack up all his gold and rich jewels which were in his care, ready for them to carry off. Having thus concerted the ſcheme, they immediately went to prepare for the execution of it.

"The firſt mention of this horrid deſign awoke all the attention of ſir Archibald. He liſtened to their diſcourſe without giving them any alarm; and as ſoon as they departed gave thanks to heaven for directing him to that place ſo opportunely, to ſave the life of his preſerver, and ſo return the obligation he owed him; ariſing, therefore, he went to the tent of Achmet, who entered juſt at the ſame time.

"The moment the chief caſt his eyes upon ſir Archibald he called him to him, and waving his hand to his attendants to withdraw, "Selim (ſaid he, his eyes "gliſtening with rapture) congratulate your happy lord. "My gracious ſovereign has this day bleſſed my hopes "with a promiſe of the hand of Zelide; and, as if "heaven meant to endear you ſtill farther to me, has "made the reſcuing of the royal ſtandard from your "hand the glorious cauſe of giving me the preference "to all my competitors. Have you been with the "princeſs? Have you mentioned my love to her? The "only delay to my happineſs now is, to obtain her "conſent. O bleſs me therefore by ſaying that ſhe "liſtens to my love."

"I have mentioned it to her, (anſwered ſir Archi-"bald, who had need for all his preſence of mind on "ſuch a trying occaſion) in the moſt affecting manner, "but it is too ſoon to expect the ſatisfaction you de-"ſire. Much time and many words are requiſite to "warm a virgin's heart."

"For this you ſhall have ample opportunity, (repli-"ed Achmet) to-morrow I will ſend you with a pre-"ſent to her; and every morning it ſhall be your

" pleaſing taſk to carry her the tribute of my love."

" The confidence with which Achmet ſaid this was a pain to the honeſt heart of ſir Archibald, as he knew he muſt neceſſarily diſappoint it. To change therefore to a topic more pleaſing to him, " You ſav-" ed my life, (ſaid he) and now heaven ſhews its ap-" probation of that generous action, by making me " the means of ſaving yours." — " He then inform-ed him of the conſpiracy he had juſt diſcovered in ſo providential a manner, and gave him advice how to detect it in the very moment of execution, to make the puniſhment of the wretches more ſignal.

" The ſoul of Achmet was ſtruck with terror at this account. The near hopes of happineſs which poſſeſſed him at this time armed every thing that might defeat them with double terrors. He embraced ſir Archibald in a tranſport, and reſigned himſelf entire-ly to his direction, his own mind being in too great agi-tation to attend to any thing.

" As the time for executing their flagitious deſign was juſt arrived, Achmet went to take his evening's repaſt, and ſeating himſelf on the carpet, without any appearance of ſuſpicion, called for ſome cooling be-verage to ſlack his thirſt. The cup-qearer, who had every thing prepared, preſented him the bowl, when ſir Archibald, who watched his looks and plainly per-ceived the anxiety of guilt in his face, made a ſignal agreed upon to Achmet, and then went into the inner tent, where he found the other loading himſelf with the gold and jewels of his lord. Dragging him forth, therefore, with this indiſputable evidence of his guilt upon him, as ſoon as he came into the preſence of Ach-met, he ſeized the cup-bearer alſo, who ſtood panting with impatience to ſee his lord drink the fatal mixture, which he yet held untaſted in his hand.

" The accomplices no ſooner ſaw each other ap-prehended in this manner, than they ſunk into the de-ſpondency of conſcious guilt, and waited, pale and trembling, for the fate which hung over them. " Miſ-" creants, (ſaid Achmet, riſing from his ſeat in a rage) " what could prompt you to this wickedneſs? Speak! " declare

" declare this moment at whoſe inſtigation you made " the baſe attempt; or torture ſhall wring the ſe- " cret from your burſting hearts."

" The wretches were unable to make any reply, when ſir Archibald interfering, " Mighty lord, (ſaid " he) the nature of their crime ſhews it was all their " own; and points out the puniſhment proper for " them. Let them drink the poiſon they had prepared " for you, and periſh by their own device. Baſe as " they are, remember they are men; nor tempt them " to aggravate the guilt with which their miſerable " ſouls are loaded by accuſing the innocent."

" Be it ſo, (anſwered the chief) their fate is in your " hands."

" Sir Archibald upon this took the bowl, and dividing the horrid contents, gave it to the trembling wretches, whoſe lives, torn from them by the moſt dreadful torments, ſoon paid the price of their guilt. Achmet then, embracing his deliverer once more, retired to try if he could calm the agitations of his ſoul by reſt."

CHAP. XVII.

The hiſtory of Sir ARCHIBALD *and* ZELIDE, *princeſs of* Armenia, *concluded.*

" THE time when the princeſs had ordered the attendance of ſir Archibald was now arived; he therefore haſted to the appointed place, where he had not waited long when an eunuch coming up and beckoning to him ſaid, " Be diſcreet, be reſolute, and " be happy."

" Sir Archibald, who well remembered theſe words, followed him, without heſitation or reply, into the royal pavilion, where he was led through ſeveral ſumptuous tents, one within another, till his guide, ſtopping and making a ſignal to him to wait there, left him. He waited not long, when a female covered with a veil entered, and ſeating herſelf on a ſofa;

" Chriſtian,"

" Chriſtian," (ſaid ſhe, in a low voice and beckoning to him to come near her) " the damſel whom you " reſcued from the raviſher in the cave, deſires you " ſhould know that ſhe retains a grateful ſenſe of your " courteſy and virtue."

" Gentle lady, (ſaid he in a voice of rapture) ac- " cept the warmeſt thanks of your ſervant for this " benign condeſcenſion; and, O! compleat the fa- " vour, by telling her, that her devoted ſlave lives " only in the hope of ſeeing her again, and pouring " out the fulneſs of his heart before her."

" Her heart (anſwered ſhe) perhaps is not leſs full " than yours; but before ſhe can comply with what " you deſire, it is proper ſhe ſhould know who you " are, and what your rank was in your native land."

" My rank, (replied he, with a ſigh) moſt courte- " ous lady, was noble, ſcarcely inferior to royalty; " the honour of my ancient houſe unſtained."

" Say then, (returned ſhe) if ſhe whom you pro- " feſs to love ſhould ſtoop from royalty itſelf to liſten " to your ſuit, what you would do to merit ſuch a " favour? Would you forego your country, renounce " the worſhip of your anceſtors, and happy in the re- " compence of her love, and of the ſtate to which ſhe " would raiſe you, ſwear you would never think of " either?

" Sir Archibald was ſtruck with ſuch horror at this propoſal, that it was ſome time before he was able to make any reply. At length, as if awaking from a " dream, " Support me, heaven! (exclaimed he with " a ſigh that ſeemed to burſt his heart) Support me! " and proportion the trials of your creature to his " ſtrength!"———

" Then turning to the female, " There is nothing, " lady, (ſaid he) within the power of man to do, or " ſuffer, which I ſhould not attempt with joy for ſuch " an ineſtimable recompence; nothing which did not " claſh with honour or virtue. But what you propoſe " would overturn both; and ſhould I be tempted to " comply, I were unworthy of a reward ſo baſely earn- " ed."

" Is this your anſwer? (replied ſhe with an accent " of indignation) Can you pretend to feel the power " of love, and yet to ſlight its object for the idle fic- " tions of ſuperſtitious prieſts? Can you mention ho- " nour, and prefer ſubjection to royalty? Think bet- " ter; nor blaſt your ripening hopes with ſuch a mean " ungrateful choice. Search your heart well, your " fate depends upon the word you ſpeak; for, never " more will you be aſked the queſtion."

" Burſt then, O wretched heart! (ſighed he) and " put a period to your torture. To live without " my love is impoſſible; and heaven itſelf forbids the " terms on which alone I can obtain her. Tell her, " kind lady, that, dearly as my heart adores her beau- " ties, a principle higher even than love, and ſtronger " than ambition, places an inſuperable bar between " us. But O, ſay at the ſame time, that the word " which thus gives up my hopes, gives up my hated " life alſo. I muſt not have her, and I cannot live " without her."

" Virtuous Chriſtian, (ſaid ſhe, lifting up her veil, " and diſcovering her beauties to his raviſhed ſight) " thou proveſt thyſelf worthy of the beſt bleſſings of " heaven by this thy noble attachment to its laws. " Behold the object of thy love, who glories in an " equal flame: yet had thy heart wavered in the " cauſe of virtue, I ſhould have diſdained the diſho- " nourable ſacrifice, and quitted thee for ever. Re- " ſtrain your raptures, and hear me for a moment. " You know not yet whom your virtues have ſubdued, " or what you muſt attempt to obtain her. I am Ze- " lide, the only daughter of the monarch of Arme- " nia. My anceſtors long gloried in the name of " Chriſtians; but unable to reſiſt the barbarous Sa- " racens, according to the policy of the world, they " renounced their faith to preſerve their power.

" My father, miſtakenly attached to the religion of " Mahomet, in which he was thus bred, led his forces " againſt the invaſion of Lewis; and, to excite the ar- " dour of his generals, declared, that he would be-

" ſtow

" ſtow me the heireſs of his throne, in marriage up-
" on him who ſhould deſerve beſt in the war. The
" emulation which this raiſed was often fatally expe-
" rienced by their enemies; but ſtill their merits were
" ſo equal, that none could claim his promiſe until
" the laſt battle, when Achmet's recovering the royal
" ſtandard from the enemy unhappily decided in his
" favour. Too ſoon I learned the unwelcome news;
" but ſtill by my intreaties prevailed upon my father
" to ſuſpend or at leaſt conceal his determination, till
" this fatal day, when all his generals ſoliciting him
" together to put an end to their importunities, he
" declared his choice. What canſt thou do to a-
" vert this misfortune? Canſt thou by any means ac-
" compliſh our eſcape to thy native land? Gold and
" jewels in abundance I can bring, to procure the
" means for our journey, and make our retirement hap-
" py. To thy honour I am bold to truſt myſelf, nor
" aſpire to a more exalted ſtate than to be thy wife;
" for though I have been obliged to profeſs the reli-
" gion of Mahomet, in my heart I am a Chriſtian.
" My mother who was a native of Circaſſia, believed
" and inſtructed me in that holy faith; to preſerve
" which I promiſed her, in her laſt moments, to give
" up every thought of worldly grandeur. My ſoul is
" grieved to diſobey, and leave my father; but a ſu-
" perior duty calls me."

" O beauteous princeſs, (ſaid ſir Archibald, proſtrat-
" ing himſelf at her feet) how ſhall the labours of
" my life make a return for this happineſs, this ho-
" nour?

" Reſtrain your raptures, (replied the princeſs) our
" time is too precious for them now. Three days re-
" ſpite only have I been able to obtain from my fa-
" ther; before they are expired we muſt eſcape from
" hence, or I am for ever loſt. I leave the manner
" of our flight to you. In this caſket is ſome gold.
" More, with the richeſt of my jewels, will I bring
" with me to-morrow night, as ſoon as darkneſs ſhall
" favour our deſign, to the hermit's cell on the ſide
" of the hill, weſtward of the camp. There let me

" meet

" meet thee with all the neceſſary means for our flight. " One only companion ſhall I bring with me. Adieu." Saying this, the princeſs departed, and the eunuch entered and conducted ſir Archibald back through the royal pavilion to the place where he had firſt met him, who immediately returned to the quarters of Achmet.

" He laid himſelf down, as if to reſt; but ſpent the remainder of the night in forming ſchemes for his intended flight; but the difficulties which attended all he could deviſe drove him almoſt to deſpair. At length he reſolved upon one that appeared leaſt liable to diſappointment. As ſoon as Achmet aroſe he went to him, and accoſting him with an air of perplexity and diſtreſs, " I come (ſaid he) a ſuppliant to thy com- " paſſion, O generous and princely Achmet. If ever " thy ſervant has found favour in thy ſight, liſten to " the requeſt of my heart. I was troubled on my bed " this night, and my ſoul was terrified by viſions. " The object of my love, whoſe image is never ab- " ſent from my mind, appeared before me in agonies " of grief. " Fly (ſaid ſhe) to my reſcue! My fa- " ther, deaf to my intreaties, and regardleſs of my " diſtreſs, prepares to give my hand to another. O " fly and ſave me! Save us both from ruin and de- " ſpair." ——— I awoke in diſmay, and in the anguiſh " of my ſoul am come to thee. Permit me, aſſiſt me " to go to my native land; and, on the faith of a " true knight, I will ſend you the ranſom which you " ſhall require."

" I require not a ranſom for the liberty of my pre- " ſerver, (anſwered Achmet) and willingly conſent to " your return as ſoon as my nuptials with the prin- " ceſs ſhall have confirmed my happineſs. You muſt " not leave me till you have ſeen and ſhared in my " joy."

" O name not happineſs or joy (replied ſir Archi- " bald) before a wretch ſinking in deſpair; the ſight " of my miſery would damp your joys. By all your " fondeſt hopes I conjure you therefore, not to de- " lay me a moment. Let me be gone this very night; " for ſomething warns my ſoul never to cloſe my

" eyes,

" eyes, till I have ſet out on this important jour-
" ney."

" Far be it from me (ſaid Achmet, moved at the
" poignancy of his diſtreſs) to oppoſe the intimations
" of thy better genius. Go in peace; and may thy
" journey be ſucceſsful. If aught in my power can
" contribute to it, demand my help with free-
" dom."

" O generous prince, (anſwered the knight) thy
" goodneſs overwhelms my ſoul, and makes my part-
" ing from thee, even on ſo dear an occaſion, pain-
" ful. If thou wilt give the impreſſion of thy ſignet,
" I will ſet out with two, the poor remains of all my
" faithful followers, whom I this day have found a-
" mong the captives, as ſent by thee on ſome impor-
" tant buſineſs; and truſt the conduct of my ſteps to
" Heaven."—— To this propoſal Achmet not only agreed, but alſo gave him ſome gold, to make proviſion for his journey, and then diſmiſſed him with a tender embrace.

" Sir Archibald ſpent the reſt of the day in pro-
curing ſwift and able horſes, with every other conve-
nience requiſite for his journey; and at the appointed
hour repaired to the hermit's cell, where the princeſs
ſoon after arrived, diſguiſed in the habit of a man, and
attended by one of her moſt favourite maidens in the
ſame dreſs. The illuſtrious fugitives ſet out directly,
paſſing all the guards by virtue of the ſignet of Ach-
met, and made ſuch expedition, travelling through
private and unfrequented ways, that by the dawn of
morning they thought themſelves ſafe from danger of
purſuit. As ſoon as it was light, they ſtopped by the
ſide of a ſtream that ran through a thick wood, where
they refreſhed themſelves, and their horſes, and reſted
till the cloſe of the day, ſir Archibald watching while
his princeſs ſlept.

" In this manner they continued their journey under
the immediate protection of Heaven, till they arrived
at Conſtantinople, chuſing the road leaſt liable to ſuſ-
picion, to baffle purſuit; there they directly embark-
ed on board a French ſhip, which landed them at
Mar-

Marſeilles, from whence they journeyed by land to Rochelle, and there hired a ſhip that carried them ſafe to Scotland.

" The joy raiſed by the arrival of ſir Archibald was not confined to his father's houſe. The whole kingdom, which had ſhared in his glory, ſhared in it. His aged father, who ſeemed to have lived only to reſign his honours to his worthy heir, was unable to ſupport the emotions of his rapture, and expired in his embraces, after having beſtowed his benediction on his ſon, and the fair partner of his eſcape, to whom earl Archibald was joined in the holy bonds of wedlock, as ſoon as he had performed the laſt duties to the honoured remains of his father; for her delicacy had not ſuffered her to think of marriage, till ſhe was arrived at the end of her travels.

" Prudence and modeſty ſuggeſted it to this illuſtrious pair to conceal the counteſs's high deſcent, that they might avoid the vain parade of ceremony, and enjoy their lives in retirement, in which earl Archibald's high ſenſe of honour, in concealing his name and country, when a captive, ſecured them from diſcovery.

" The only cloud that ſeemed to over-caſt their joy, aroſe from the pious concern of the counteſs to hear ſome account of her father. To procure this, the earl ſent one of his faithful men, who had accompanied him in his eſcape, who undertook not only to gain his lady tidings of him, but alſo, by ſome means or other to lighten his ſorrow, by letting him know that ſhe was happy. He ſet out in the dreſs of a pilgrim, and performed his journey with ſucceſs, bringing her word, that, ſtruck with her flight, which he looked upon as a puniſhment from heaven for his profeſſing the religion of Mahomet, againſt the admonitions of his conſcience, which was ſecretly inclined to the chriſtian faith, he had reſigned his crown to Achmet, and devoted the remainder of his days to Heaven, in a monaſtry.

This account compleated the happineſs of the counteſs, who bleſſed the wiſe diſpenſations of providence, which

which had thus made her the cauſe of her father's converſion. The earl deſigned never to have quitted his ſweet retirement; but the ſtronger attachment of loyalty once more called him forth into the buſy world. His ſovereign dying ſuddenly, and leaving an infant heir, ſeveral of the nobles, ſtirred up by impious ambition, ſtrove to get the royal infant into their hands that they might murder him, and ſo uſurp his throne; but the vigilance of his mother prevented their deſigns, and conveyed him ſecretly into France.

"Arouzed by the diſtreſs of his ſovereign and his country, which was now a prey to all the miſeries of anarchy, earl Archibald aroſe, and by his valour and prudent conduct ſoon reſtored peace. The people, in gratitude for this ſervice, with one voice offered him the crown; but he refuſed it with noble diſdain, and obliging them to ſwear allegiance to their rightful prince, recalled and placed him on the throne of his anceſtors.

CHAP XVIII.

Anecdotes of a loyal family concluded. Several inſtances of uncommon loyalty rewarded in the common manner, with ſome reflections intereſting to thoſe whom they may concern.

THE deſcendants of earl Archibald followed his ſteps in the paths of honour and virtue. In the days of the unfortunate MARY, whoſe ſufferings ended not even with her life, her fame being ſtill maligned to extenuate the injuſtice of her fate, the noble earl, head of our houſe, ſtood firm in the cauſe of injured majeſty, ſacrificing the greater part of his ample poſſeſſions, to ſupport his royal miſtreſs.

"When JAMES ſucceeded to the rights which had proved ſo fatal to his mother, thoſe ſervices were all forgotten, and his favours laviſhed on a ſet of upſtart hungry

hungry parasites: but not discouraged by this ingratitude, when his ill-fated son wanted the assistance of his loyal subjects, in the impious contest between the ENGLISH and their sovereign, which cost him his sacred life, again our house stood forth, a noble pattern of unshaken loyalty, and were the greatest sufferers in his cause.

" At the restoration of the monarchy, they met the same reward as they had before from the grandsire of CHARLES; nor reaped any other benefit from that happy event, than the gratification of the loyalty, which was the ruling principle of their lives.

" Gold is purified by fiery trials. This only made their virtues shine with brighter lustre. They shewed the same attachment to the son as they had to his father; and disdaining to submit to power which they looked upon as unnaturally usurped, followed misguided JAMES, when he abandoned his throne, into a foreign land, exerting their loyalty in service to his person, till Heaven should point out a propitious moment for accomplishing their hopes of recovering for him at least the ancient crown of his ancestors; a crown which they wore with distinguished glory, till Heaven in its wrath joined another to it, greater indeed in wealth and power, but not of greater honour.

" Since that fatal period our glory has shone with diminished splendor; and we have been looked down upon as dependants, by those who dreaded us before as rivals; and at length, to compleat the ruin of our wretched country, some of her degenerate sons, seduced by bribery and vain hopes of power, sealed their own infamy, and her disgrace, by formally renouncing every shadow of royalty, and giving up the very style and title of a kingdom which had flourished, for a long succession of ages, before that to which they basely thus betrayed its rights had even gained a name.

" The venal and inconstant English, a mingled race, made up of every people under heaven, and those

thoſe whom their example had debauched, may practice and applaud ſuch corruption; but Scotland's true-born honeſt ſons will ever watch occaſion to ſhake off the ſhameful yoke, and reſtore the honour of their country, by reſtoring to its throne a race of kings dedeſcended from themſelves.

" Educated in theſe principles, though under the power which I abhorred, it was natural for me to ſeize the firſt opportunity of drawing my ſword in the cauſe of my rightful ſovereign. I joined in the attempt made by his ſon, and was a ſharer in his unparalleled ſufferings.

" I had been too active in his intereſt to eſcape unnoticed. This precluded every thought of living in my own country, even if I could ſtoop to diſſemble my principles, and ſubmit to the prevailing powers. The honour of my anceſtors was now the only inheritance which I derived from them. In the difficulties therefore which ſuch a ſituation was ſubject to, my natural recourſe was to the profeſſion of arms, the only profeſſion which would not be a diſgrace to my blood, unſtained from endleſs ages by the mean arts of induſtry: and to whom ſhould I offer my ſword but to the prince to whom my royal maſter had himſelf fled in his diſtreſs; and who, I flatter myſelf, has had no reaſon to repent of the aſylum he afforded me; for though my actions have not been yet rewarded by fortune, my name is not unknown to fame?

" This honeſt repreſentation will to every candid mind remove the prejudices ſo injuriouſly entertained againſt me, and all in my unhappy circumſtances. We come not as preferring another country to our own, or ſtriving to ſupplant the natives in the favours of fortune. Neceſſity, irreſiſtible neceſſity, urges our reluctant ſteps; and we are received and rewarded accordingly, not with the reſpect of welcome gueſts, the liberality and honours due to merit. The coldneſs of charity frowns upon our reproach, and all our ſervices are thought to be over paid by a bare ſubſiſtence. Indeed, ſuch are the ſentiments which this undeſerved

deſerved treatment inſpires, that, did not the ſhort-ſighted policy of our native country bar our return by injunctions inſignificant to them, and impoſſible to be complied with by us, the ardour of our loyalty would be damped, and many of us gladly go home and live in peace; by which means, if we did not actually become their beſt ſubjects, we ſhould at leaſt rid them of their moſt dangerous enemies."

The appearance of the morning here put an end to his diſcourſe, which his companion heard without interruption, though with viſible indifference, and aſſented to in the politeſt manner. When they were relieved they retired to their reſpective tents with equal expedition, though on different occaſions; the former to repleniſh his ſnuff-box, which he had emptied in the earneſtneſs of his converſation, and the other to waſh his neck-cloth and ruffles, and powder his hair, that he might make a proper appearance when he waited upon his general.

CHAP. XIX.

The difference between fighting battles in the field, and in the cabinet. The happineſs of having good friends, with further inſtances of military equity.

AS the late miſcarriage had made a conſiderable alteration in the ſituation of affairs, it was neceſſary to ſend notice of it to all the parties engaged in the ſame cauſe, that they might regulate their meaſures accordingly. Nothing could draw a ſtronger picture of human vanity, than the terms in which this account was given. Inſtead of owning with candour that they had been ſeverely repulſed, and in danger of an abſolute defeat, they only ſaid, "that the enemy having eſcaped by accident from an attack by which they deſigned to have gained a deciſive victory, they had thought proper to make ſome alterations in the plan of their operations for the reſt of the campaign."

But

But this vain evaſion was inſtantly ſeen through; the ſteps they were obliged to take in conſequence of a diſappointment which they affected to treat ſo ſlighty, ſhewed that it was a matter of the moſt ſerious nature, and had effectually broke through all their meaſures for that campaign, on the ſucceſs of which they had built ſuch ſanguine hopes, and exerted their utmoſt efforts to promote it.

As there was nothing more to be ſeen here, I took the opportunity of accompanying a courier who was ſent on this occaſion to another of the armies, confederate in the ſame cauſe, the general of which had acquired ſuch reputation by his conduct, that I expected to find the art of war reduced by him to a regular ſcience, and carried on in a manner worthy of a rational being: how well my expectations were anſwered, the event will ſhew.

I found him in his tent, reading over ſome orders which he had juſt received from his court. When he had finiſhed them, "What trouble have I (ſaid he to himſelf) to keep theſe people from ruining themſelves? "A woman has the vapours, and therefore I muſt "fight a battle to raiſe her ſpirits with the news of a "victory. A miniſter wants to diſplay his talents, "and I muſt take a town, that he may draw up "the articles of capitulation; and yet the leaſt miſ-"carriage in the execution of their orders, however "ill-timed or abſurd, will be laid entirely to my "charge. This is the happineſs of ſerving under "people who know nothing of the matter; who di-"rect the operations of a campaign in their cloſets, "draw up armies upon paper, make marches, and "form ſieges with their fingers in the wine ſpilled "on the table; and fight battles, and beat their ene-"mies as they get drunk. But I am not to be moved "by their humours. I have preſerved them hitherto "in ſpight of themſelves, by adhering ſteadily to my "own opinion; and I will continue to do ſo, or re-"ſign the command, and leave them to their fate." —Saying this, he gave orders to double all the fortifications of his camp, and then returned a ſummary

anſwer

anſwer to the miniſter, that the ſituation of affairs at that time made it impoſſible for him to obey his directions.

Such cautious conduct in an army, whoſe ſtrength ſeemed almoſt to make all caution unneceſſary, appeared very extraordinary; but a little obſervation explained the reaſon of it. In the mean time other occurrences, new to me, and ſtrange in ſpeculation, tho' common in the military practice, attracted my attention. As the general went to take a view of his entrenchments, and that he might ſee where it was moſt proper to add to their ſtrength, according to his own ſyſtem, he was met by a deputation from the inhabitants of the country, on a moſt intereſting occaſion. Though he was determined not to take the leaſt notice of any thing they could ſay, he thought proper to give them an hearing to ſave appearances.

The perſon who ſpoke to him, in the name of the reſt, addreſſing him with an air of reſpect, mixed with indignation, "I am ſent to your excellency (ſaid he) "by the few remaining inhabitants of this wretched "country, to implore your commiſeration of their "diſtreſſed ſtate. The misfortunes impoſſible to be "avoided in the ſeat of a war, have long ſince con"ſumed their ſtrength, and exhauſted all their regu"lar reſources. The contributions demanded by your "excellency yeſterday, exceed their utmoſt power. "The indiſpenſable means of ſubſiſtence is all that is "left them; to take the ſmalleſt portion from which "muſt make life a curſe, and aggravate their miſe"ries to deſpair. Your ſovereign and our's are con"federates in this war, the cauſe of which was origi"nally your's; and ſo muſt the advantage be in the "end. We expect nothing. Why then muſt the "weight of it be laid entirely upon us? If you come "for our protection, why do you not drive our ene"mies away? If that is not to be done, why not "march into their territories, and remove to them a "burthen which we can no longer bear? It were bet"ter for us to ſupport but one army, even though that "were of enemies, than two. The number of our

"very

" very friends has eaten us up. We throw ourſelves " therefore upon your excellency's juſtice and com- " paſſion, and beg an alleviation of diſtreſſes, which " we are unable to ſuſtain. Repreſent our caſe in " its proper colours to your ſovereign; and, in the " mean time, ſuſpend the execution of orders which " overwhelm us with deſpair."

The general heard this pathetic ſpeech without the leaſt emotion; and as ſoon as it was concluded, " I " am ſorry for your ſufferings; (anſwered he coldly) " but the redreſs of them lies not in my power. You " muſt apply to the miniſtry. If they ſupply me with " other means to ſupport the war, I ſhall be glad; " till then I muſt make uſe of thoſe in my hands."— Then turning directly to an officer who ſtood near him, he ordered the contributions to be levied, without favour or delay.

The unſucceſsful advocates had ſcarce departed, when an expreſs arrived from one of his advanced poſts, to inform him that the enemy had laid all that ſide of the country in flames, and were juſt then make- ing ſome motions which appeared as if they intended to attack him in his entrenchments. His officers heard this account with the higheſt indignation; and, confiding in their numbers, expreſſed their eagerneſs to prevent ſuch an inſult, by marching out directly to meet them.

But the general diſregarded their ardour, and firmly reſolved to purſue his own ſyſtem; " The enemy " ſhould know me too well, (ſaid he) to imagine that I " can be taken with ſuch a bait! When there is no- " thing more to burn the flames will go out of them- " ſelves. All their braving ſhall not make me quit " the advantage of my ſituation. The event of bat- " tles is uncertain, and often proves contrary to the " beſt founded expectation. Beſide, their affairs and " ours are in a very different ſtate. A victory might " accompliſh all their deſigns, which are diſappointed " as effectually by delay as by a defeat; it is there- " fore right in them to riſk every thing. But the " contrary is our caſe; we might loſe every thing by a defeat,

a defeat; and do gain as much by delay, as we could by victory; ſo that to put any thing to the hazard were madneſs. As to the diſgrace to our honour, in being braved thus, that is nothing. Succeſs alone is honour in war. I am ſorry, it is true, for the ruin of the country; but I have other buſineſs here beſide preſerving that, and which I muſt firſt attend to; and I ſhall think myſelf happy if I can accompliſh it at ſo eaſy a rate as the ruin of a country that does not belong to us."———Saying this, he continued his ride, abſolutely unmoved at the ſight of the flames which aroſe from all the villages in that particular part of the country from whence he had drawn his ſubſiſtence, while there was any remaining for him.

There was ſomething ſo deliberately cruel in protracting the miſeries of the innocent in this manner, in order to wear out an enemy whom he was evidently afraid to face in the field, that however conſonant it might be to the principles of military equity, and however juſt his maxim, that "Succeſs alone is honour in war," I turned away from the ſight with abhorrence.

CHAP. XX.

War! War in procinct! The comforts of Greatneſs. *A night-ſcene, with a continuation of it, neither of the moſt agreeable nature.*

THOUGH my heart was by this time ſick of war, curioſity ſtill had force to make me take a view of the army oppoſed to this, the character of whoſe commander promiſed ſome variety, and more active ſcenes at leaſt, if not more rational and humane than thoſe I had hitherto ſeen. "It is not poſſible (thought I) that the military ſcience, which has been ſo highly extolled by men of the greateſt genius in every age and country, and made the ſeal of fame, the

indiſputed title to every advantage of this world, ſhould be ſuch a confuſed medley of blunders and butchery, carried on headlong, without regard to the moſt indiſpenſible principles of juſtice or humanity, or attention to any rational or determined point, beſide avarice, or a ſavage paſſion for revenge. The generals who make ſo grand a figure in the writings of poets, and hiſtorians, could not have been like theſe; nor the battles, by which they acquired their immortal glory ſuch fruitleſs random ſcenes of blind, and worſe than brutal carnage! I have been often cautioned againſt forming my judgment too haſtily."

Having confirmed myſelf in my reſolution by theſe reflections, I was ſo deſirous to put it in execution, that I would not even ſtay to travel with any other perſon, as I had done before; but availing myſelf of the powers with which the ſpirit had endowed me, I *wiſhed* myſelf directly into the enemy's camp.

The firſt things that ſtruck me here were the eagerneſs and aſſiduity of every individual, ſo different from the liſtleſs ſtupidity and careleſsneſs which had given me ſuch diſguſt in the other armies. The ſoldiers ſeemed by their looks to underſtand the motives of the war in which they were engaged, and to think themſelves intereſted in the event. Such a ſight gave me pleaſure. "This (thought I) is ſomething worth beholding! Theſe act like men, by exerting that reaſon which diſtinguiſhes them from brutes; and that cauſe muſt be juſt which ſo many approve of, and ſupport with their lives."

As I was making theſe reflections, the commander (whom I found to be their ſovereign) paſſed me, and by his affability and encouraging addreſs added wings to the diligence with which they all ſtrove to execute his commands. I joined him directly, ſtudious to obſerve every look and action of ſo extraordinary a perſon.

He was that morning making a general review of his army, which was drawn out for that purpoſe. Though every thing was ſtrictly regular, and bore the moſt martial appearance, I remarked that the monarch frequently

frequently ſighed as he darted his experienced eye along the ranks. He ſeemed to look for ſomething which he could not find, and melted almoſt into tears at the tender youth of the greater part of his troops.

But if the private men appeared young and unexperienced, the officers of every degree wore the oppoſite characters in their countenances. Birth, riches, or favour, evidently had no place in their promotion. They roſe by merit alone, and the ſoldier who deſerved command was ſure of obtaining it. This was the moſt effectual proviſion which human prudence could make to enſure ſucceſs; nor did the event diſappoint it. If the Inferiority of his numbers hindered his obtaining deciſive victories, the excellent diſcipline of his forces ſo far ballanced that advantage, that his enemies could not prevail againſt him.

When he had finiſhed the buſineſs of the morning, he retired to his tent and throwing himſelf, with a fatigued look and diſcontented air, into a chair, "When will this horrid work be at an end? (ſaid he) When ſhall my wearied heart have reſt? O ambition, thou madneſs of miſguided man! Thou ſource of the worſt evils which afflict his wretched race! To thee are ſacrificed all the tenderneſſes of humanity, all the moſt ſacred principles of ſocial and moral virtue. And for what? To purſue an uneſſential phantom, to graſp at a bubble that melts at the touch, and illudes the empty hand! For ſuch is the glory of this world, however highly blazoned by prejudice and vanity; the echo of a ſound that has paſſed by, the ſhadow of a cloud that floats in the air."

He was interrupted in theſe reflections by the arrival of a courier, with diſpatches from one of his miniſters. The moment he ran his eye over them, that gloom of laſſitude and diſcontent which overcaſt his brow vaniſhed, his eye flaſhed with reſentment and martial ardour, and his whole frame ſeemed to be on fire. He gave orders for all his generals to attend him directly, and then walking a turn or two about his tent, "No!

(ſaid he) it is not come to that yet. Never will I ſubmit to ſuch ignominious terms while I have one ſubject able to draw a ſword. Never will I tarniſh the glory of ſo many victories by the leaſt conceſſion. Is my fate to depend on the caprice of women? Are my dominions to be parcelled out by dreaming ſtateſmen? Sooner ſhall the ravages of war conſume them all, than I will yield to ſuch diſhonour. I'll fight it out to the laſt man, ſet fire to the laſt town with my own hand, and periſh in the flames, before my ſoul ſhall bend to their deſires, or comply with ſuch diſgraceful conditions."

The entrance of his officers broke off his meditations. He pauſed a moment, to moderate the emotions of his ſoul, and then addreſſing himſelf to them, "My friends, (ſaid he) our enemies inſult us. They make propoſals too haughty and ſevere to be received even from victors. But we will bring them to a more moderate way of thinking. I am reſolved to make one effort, to put an end to this deſtructive war. We will this night attack the enemy in ſuch a quarter. Our wary adverſary will not run the hazard of ſuccouring his colleague in the dark, for fear an attempt ſhould be made upon his own camp in the mean while; ſo that, for this time, the advantage of numbers will not be againſt us. In other reſpects, I know the difficulty of the undertaking; but difficulties never diſcourage a brave mind from great attempts. I am ſick of the horrors of war, and will ſee no more of them. We will either conquer or die."

His generals heard theſe words with a melancholy, fierce delight. They all wiſhed to ſee an end put to the calamities which laid their country waſte; if that could not be accompliſhed, death appeared a deſirable releaſe from the horrors with which they were ſurrounded. As ſoon as they left their ſovereign's preſence, therefore, they embraced each other, as men who expected not to meet again, and then went to prepare every thing for putting his commands in execution.

As

As for the monarch, the approach of ſuch a ſcene ſeemed a relief to his mind, by diverting his attention from the reflections which tortured him before. Unentangled in the tender connexions of nature, which, as it were, multiply a man into many ſelfs for the ſafety of each dear particular of whom, his anxiety is greater than for his own, he looked forward to the dreadful hour unmoved; and, deſpiſing any danger which threatened himſelf, was not diſturbed with ſympathetic apprehenſions for others.

At length the moment, loaded with the fate of ſo many thouſands, arrived. The horrors of ſuch a ſight are beyond deſcription; my ſoul ſtill ſickens at the thought. I have ſaid that the attack was to be made in the night. Nature, as if to hide the madneſs of mankind, wrapped the guilty ſcene in tenfold darkneſs. This was favourable to the aſſailants. Inſpired with the reſolution of their ſovereign, they knew that their road to victory was right forwards, and ruſhed on with an impetuoſity impoſſible to be reſiſted; while their opponents, attacked on every ſide, knew not where to direct their force. But neither did they know whither to retreat. If diſtraction therefore made their efforts leſs effectual, deſpair ſupported their reſolution. They fought at random, and deſtroyed their friends as well as their enemies: but ſtill they fought with valour, heightened by deſpair. At length their entrenchments were all forced, and they were driven, themſelves ſcarce knew whither. The darkneſs, which before was againſt them, proved now their ſecurity. Purſuit was impoſſible. The advantage alſo had already coſt the victors ſo dear, that they were cautious, as the leaſt miſcarriage might reverſe the ſucceſs.

The heart of man muſt be ſeared againſt every feeling of humanity, to ſupport ſuch a ſight as the morning-light diſcloſed. The victorious monarch, animated with all his martial enthuſiaſm, was unable to bear it. He led his men, haraſſed as they were, in purſuit of the enemy, though he expected not to overtake them; but then it removed him from this horrid ſcene.

As ſoon as his ſpirits had cooled a little from the ardour, or rather madneſs, neceſſary to ſupport them through their late exertion, he ſought to relieve nature by reſt. But the labours of his mind were far from being at an end. Sleep had no ſooner overpowered his weary ſenſes, than his imagination was at work, and placed him in the midſt of the tumults and confuſion from which he was but juſt delivered. He gave aloud the ſeveral words of command, and fought over again the whole battle of the night before, with as much eagerneſs and anxiety as if he was actually engaged, till at length the hurry of his ſpirits and agitation of his whole frame awoke him, little refreſhed by ſuch broken ſlumbers. Such a life could not afford pleaſure in the contemplation. I was juſt turning from him, ſurfeited with *heroiſm* and *greatneſs*, when an affair that ſhewed his character in a new light attracted my attention.

CHAP. XXI.

An approved medicine for a ſick mind. A curious converſation between two great *perſons, with a compendious method of acquiring fame.*

WHEN he aroſe from his thorny pillow, he went to a trunk, and taking out a book, "Learning (ſaid he, ſighing) has been called the medicine of the mind. Let me try if I can find it ſo. No mind ever wanted a medicine to heal its ſickneſs, more than mine does at this moment."—Then reading a page or two, "Aye, (continued he) theſe are fine ſchemes, if they could but be brought to bear. Any of them would enſure the wiſhed-for envied epithet of *great*, without the fatigue of this horrid trade of war; though I much fear this too will diſappoint me as that did, and that in the end I ſhall find I have conſumed my life in building caſtles in the air."

He then pauſed a moment, in a diſcontented mood, and, throwing by the book, took up a written paper,

on

on which he had ſcarce caſt his eye when he ſeemed to have found the remedy he wanted. A ſmile of ſelf complacency ſoftened his brow, his eyes ſparkled with pleaſure, and his heart throbbed with conſcious pride, as he read it over moſt emphatically to himſelf. "Why did I not fix my hopes of fame, my claim to immortality, on theſe? (ſaid he, ſwelling into tenfold conſequence as he ſpoke) the muſes would not have diſdained my addreſſes; they would have crowned me with that glory which I ſought for in vain in philoſophy, and fear I purſue with no better proſpect of ſucceſs in war. But ſoft! Is not this the day on which that favourite of the muſes, *Crambo*, promiſed to come and ſhew me his laſt work? Who knows but I may effect the ſum of all my deſigns by his aſſiſtance? Every other buſineſs muſt give place to this. I would not miſs the pleaſure of converſing with him, or run the hazard of any other's ſeeing his works before me, for many reaſon's" ——— Saying this, he called one of his attendants, and, ſending ſome general directions to his officers, gave orders that no one ſhould be admitted to him that morning but a particular perſon, whom he deſcribed.

He had not waited long, when the expected viſitor arrived, diſguiſed in ſuch a manner as muſt effectually conceal him. The monarch received him with the greateſt familiarity, and pointing to a chair near himſelf, "Sit down, my friend, (ſaid he) diſtinction is unneceſſary among the muſes ſons. You wonder, I doubt not, at my deſiring you to come in that diſguiſe; but the reaſon was this: In my ſituation every motion is expoſed to notice. When I have a mind, therefore, to ſteal an hour from care, I am obliged to uſe ſome artifice of this kind, to conceal my deſign. I am now thought to be engaged on the moſt weighty affairs; and your dreſs, with the myſterious manner of your introduction, favours the deceit, and makes you paſs for ſome ſecret emiſſary who has brought me intelligence. Were it known that I enjoy one hour of ſocial converſe, like another man it would take off from my importance, and weak

en that implicit reſpect which the nature of my affairs makes indiſpenſible. This is the bleſſing of pre-eminence: painful pre-eminence, eminent in woe."

"But let us quit ſo diſagreeable a ſubject. Have you brought me the piece you mentioned in your letter? I long to ſee it; and hope you have not taken the leaſt notice of it to any other perſon living. Alexander was not more jealous of his tutor's publiſhing his knowledge for the inſtruction of the world, than I am of your communicating your works, even by the bare mention of their names, before I have had the firſt peruſal of them. Like him, I would engroſs the ſole enjoyment."

"Your majeſty does me the higheſt honour by this jealouſy; (anſwered the other) but I am afraid the object will be found unworthy. However, ſuch as it is, I lay it at your feet."

——"But has no living perſon ſeen nor even heard of it?"

——"None, I can moſt truely aſſure your majeſty. I obeyed your commands with the greateſt care. Here it is. The ſubject, I own, is trifling; but I hope the execution will not diſpleaſe you. It is a ſhort confutation of all the prejudices which have ſo long enſlaved the human mind, under the title of religion. I have proved, in an allegorical hiſtory, by familiar inſtances taken from real or at leaſt poſſible life, which is the ſame thing, that chance governs the world, and every occurrence in it; and that to attribute them to any other cauſe, ſuch as infinite power, wiſdom, goodneſs, and ſuch like, is moſt abſurd, as they are plainly contrary to the effects of ſuch a cauſe; and to give a greater force to my reaſoning, I have all along affected to treat theſe very notions, which I controvert, with the moſt ſolemn reſpect.

"Juſt as I have written with the greateſt acerbity againſt maxims (interrupted the king) which I practiſe every hour of my life."——Then running his eye haſtily over the firſt page, which chance had opened to him, "This is the thing (continued he, in a rap-

rapture) which has been ever wanted to clear the eyes of man, and enlighten his mind with the radiance of real knowledge. The voice of reaſon here utters the ſacred words of truth, adorned with all the beauties of imagination. How exactly have you hit upon my ſentiments! how forcibly expreſſed them! My actions muſt have long proved to all who are capable of lifting up the veil which neceſſity obliges man to wear, that this is my opinion. You muſt leave the manuſcript with me, that I may peruſe it at my better leiſure; and remember, I have your promiſe, that you will not mention a word of it to any mortal. I have reaſons for this injunction, which may not be diſagreeable to you."

——"Nothing that your majeſty commands can be diſagreeable to me; nor need you doubt my ſervice. Here is another little thing a mock-heroic poem, in which the folly of all the philoſophy, and the falſe pretenſions to knowledge, which have impoſed upon the world for ſo many generations, are properly diſplayed. It is ſomething of the ſame nature with the other, the deſign of which it compleats, by ſhewing that there is nothing certain in this life; and, therefore, that true wiſdom conſiſts in doing that which is moſt agreeable to ourſelves without regard to any contrary opinions, however hallowed to fooliſh veneration by the ruſt and cobwebs of antiquity."

——"My ſyſtem ſtill. Yes! let me have it. My head is ſtunned with the noiſe of war, and wants the harmony of your numbers to compoſe it. This is poetry. This is the genuine effuſion of a mind inſpired. Such writing diſdains the critic's rage, and even riſes above the wreck of time. What elegance! What fire! How bold, and yet how clear."

——"Your majeſty's approbation is the higheſt object of my ambition. It is fame. Though till that ſanction is made public, I doubt not but I ſhall have an outcry raiſed againſt me, particularly on account of the firſt work, for bringing ridicule to aid

my arguments, againſt opinions ſo long conſecrated, by ignorance to blind reſpect. But it was impoſſible to reſtrain the ſallies of wit on ſubjects which lay ſo open to its laſh."

——" Moſt certainly; nor are they in the leaſt reprehenſible. A poignant jeſt often ſhames a man out of an opinion which no argument could make him give up. You tell me with the aſſurance of ſacred truth, that no man living knows any thing of either of theſe works. In return for your complying with my deſire in that, I will now intruſt you with the darling ſecret of my ſoul. No man muſt ever know any thing of them. I mean, as your's. Shall I tell you all? You are ſenſible of the ardour with which I pant for fame. Though chance has thrown me into the more turbulent ſcenes of life, my heart languiſhes for the happineſs of retirement, for the glory that is acquired by the calmer works of learned eaſe: nor were my firſt eſſays to obtain it ſo unſucceſsful as to diſcourage the purſuit, did the indiſpenſible duties of my ſtation permit it.

" Can you then, my friend, indulge this ruling paſſion of my ſoul ſo far, as to give up theſe children of your brain to my adoption, and let me produce them to the world as my own, without danger of paternal fondneſs's breaking out, and claiming them? I know it is a delicate and difficult requeſt; but I will amply recompenſe your compliance, and then you will ſoon be able to produce more. The ſpring from whence theſe flowed is not exhauſted."

" Beſide, I claim a kind of right to them. They are the very ſentiments of my ſoul, which I deſigned to have publiſhed as ſoon as I could ſpare time to diſpoſe them into proper order. In this you have prevented me; may I not ſay rather, ſaved me the trouble, and now preſent my own anticipated offſpring to me, with the advantage of being educated by your hand. The matter is literally mine, as much as it is your's, the form indeed is all your own.

own. What do you ſay? Are you willing to gratify my deſire?"

——"Every command of your majeſty's is entitled to immediate obedience; I moſt willingly conſign them into your hands, to diſpoſe of as you pleaſe, either to publiſh or abſolutely ſuppreſs them for ever. Could I have thought of their having ſuch a glorious fate, I ſhould have laboured to make them more worthy of it."

——"They are very well. It is the ſubject that particularly ſtrikes me. If I find any thing amiſs in the manner of treating it, I will myſelf correct it. Here! take this order to my treaſurer: You ſee it is expreſly ſaid to be for *ſecret* ſervice."

"Your majeſty's munificence (anſwered the lucky author, who was ſo aſtoniſhed at the greatneſs of the ſum, that it was ſome time before he had power to ſpeak) overwhelms me with confuſion. This is too much; too much for me to take!"

——"But not for me to give (replied the monarch, ſmiling). Let me ſee you again before you go away. I muſt now give ſome orders, which are this moment come into my head; but I ſhall be at leiſure by the time you return from the treaſurer."

The author bowed with the moſt profound reſpect, and departed in evident happineſs of heart.

When he was gone, the king, looking at his new purchaſe with the higheſt delight, At length (ſaid he) I have accompliſhed my deſign. Theſe will extend my fame through the whole circle of the human powers. I ſhine already as a legiſlator and hiſtorian; theſe add the characters of a poet, and a divine. Singularity is the firſt ſtep to eminence. A *great* man ſhould do nothing in the common way. Now that I have unhinged the religion of the world, as ſoon as I am at leiſure I will deviſe a new one of my own, and erect it on the ruins of the old. This is all I want to confirm my being the *greateſt* man of this, or any age."

When

When he had pleaſed himſelf with theſe reflections for ſome time, he reſumed his wonted thoughtful look, and went to meet his miniſters, who, ſtruck with his appearance, liſtened to his words with a kind of religious veneration, prepared to obey whatever he ſhould command, without preſuming to diſcuſs it even in their own minds, as if he had been a being of a ſuperior nature.

Having diſpatched theſe affairs, he retired to meet the happy author, who had received the money, and was returned according to his orders. "Well, (ſaid the king) I hope you don't regret the exchange you have made. I have nothing more to ſay to you at this time, but to deſire that I may hear conſtantly from you. Much as I am involved in other affairs, I ſhall always find time to correſpond with you; and obſerve, that I inſiſt on your laying aſide all formality, and writing your thoughts as freely as they riſe in your mind; as I, and all lovers of philoſophic truth do."

"Your majeſty (anſwered the other) heaps new honours on me, by every new command. I will obey you with the utmoſt punctuality, and think myſelf happy if my poor works can merit the approbation of ſo conſummate a judge."——The ſcene now grew ſo fulſome, each flattering the other in the groſſeſt manner, that I was glad when it was ended.

This contemptible inſtance of vanity ſullied the luſtre of the monarch's other qualities, and made me ſo ſick of ambition in every ſhape, that I could bear the ſight of him no longer. I therefore took my leave of heroiſm and *greatneſs*, of which my heart was ſick, and departed along with the author, in whom I ſaw ſomething that raiſed my curioſity to be better acquainted with him.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIII.

A remarkable inſtance of poetic gratitude and juſtice, with ſome anecdotes of a celebrated genius.

THE moment he left the monarch's preſence, he made all poſſible haſte to get out of his reach alſo, for fear of his changing his mind, and reſuming his moſt profuſe preſent. When his heart was freed from this fear, on his entering the territories of a neutral power, he ſtopped, to recover his fatigue, and conſider how he ſhould diſpoſe of his new fortune in the moſt proper manner. After a variety of ſchemes, he at laſt reſolved to fix his abode in the territories of a certain free but poor ſtate, where he ſhould be at liberty to purſue his own Inclinations without interruption, and gain reſpect by the magnificence which he was now able to diſplay.

This firſt point being ſettled, his thoughts naturally recurred to the means by which he had acquired his fortune. Amply as the monarch had paid him for the honour of fathering his works, his vanity took the alarm at the fame he ſhould loſe, and envy determined him to break faith with his benefactor, and betray his weakneſs by publiſhing the works in his own name, as ſoon as ever the king ſhould declare them to be his; for he would not do it ſooner to prevent him, that the detection might heighten the diſgrace, the thoughts of his being under obligation, to which he meant to make ſo baſe a return, inflaming his heart with the moſt malignant hatred. "I will expoſe him to the contempt of mankind, (ſaid he) for his meanneſs and vanity. He never ſhall have the honour of my works. When he has plumed himſelf in the merit of them for a while, I'll ſtrip the gawdy daw of his ſtolen feathers, and point him out to univerſal ridicule. He make alterations too! and correct my errors! Let him, let him expoſe himſelf! The coarſe patches will betray the bungling hand that puts them on, and

and ſerve for a convenient foil to the reſt. If he deſires fame, let him earn it, and not ſtrive thus to ſteal it from another. He never ſhall have the honour of my works. Had he not been a fool, he might have foreſeen this, and in the plenitude of his tyranny have put it out of my power to defeat his deſign, by taking away my life; but I am now beyond his reach, and ſhall take care to keep myſelf ſo."—— Then melting into rapture, at the thought of his wealth, "I will live (continued he) like a prince among thoſe republicans, whoſe parſimony will be a foil to my munificence. Every thing about me, every thing I do ſhall have an air of grandeur; I'll build a theatre at my own houſe, where I will have my works repreſented according to my own taſte, to my choſen friends."

The deliberate baſeneſs of this reſolution, ſo contradictory to the proper uſe of the powers which produced the occaſion of it, tempted me to look back to the principal occurrences in the life of ſo extraordinary a perſon. He was born in a neighbouring country, where genius is encouraged by approbation, and ſtarves in the midſt of flattery. Abilities, ſuch as his, ſoon diſtinguiſhed themſelves. He became the favourite of the publick, and heard nothing but his own praiſes. But his reign was not long. He thought with a freedom and ſpirit which gave jealouſy to a government eſtabliſhed on the principles of deſpotiſm, and was obliged to fly his native land, to avoid falling a ſacrifice to his fame.

The country in which he took refuge was in every reſpect the reverſe of that he left. Approbation was given ſparingly, and never ſoon; but the more ſubſtantial reward of preſent profit ſeldom diſappointed merit; and rational liberty gave genius its full ſcope. Here he firſt taſted the ſweets of independency, and formed ſchemes for eſtabliſhing himſelf in the poſſeſſion of that inеſtimable bleſſing. But his eagerneſs diſappointed him, by betraying him into ſome actions which obliged him to quit that country as precipitately as he had his own, to avoid a more ignominious fate.

After

After ſome time ſpent in diſcontented rambling, this prince, whom his fame had reached, not only gave him an aſylum in his dominions, but alſo heaped his favours on him ſo laviſhly, that he reſumed his hopes of independency, which this laſt affair enabled him to accompliſh in a manner he had never even raiſed wiſhes to. The return he meditated, and did afterwards partly make (for when he conſidered more cooly, he dropt that part of his ſcheme of letting the king publiſh them firſt, for fear his credit ſhould overbalance his own, and make himſelf appear the plagiary, and therefore printed them directly in his own name; a perfidy which the diſcontented monarch did not dare to impeach, and could not puniſh) was agreeable to the natural tendency of his diſpoſition, and of a piece with his behaviour to the people whoſe beneficence had afforded him relief, and firſt raiſed his hopes, whom he calumniated with the moſt malignant virulence, as ſoon as he was out of the reach of their offended laws.

The abilities which enabled him to triumph over ſo many difficulties as his folly drew him into, were certainly very great, though vanity much leſſened their merit. An affectation of ſingularity, of ſhewing himſelf wiſer than all the reſt of the world, making him diſpute the truth of, and treat with contempt thoſe principles which had ever been held in the higheſt reſpect, and eſtabliſhed as the rules of moral action, the foundations of religious faith.

Impious and abſurd as ſuch vanity was, it found applauſe and imitation from the kindred vanity of the greater part of mankind; and the intereſt they had in ſupplanting an authority that contradicted their practice, and made it criminal in the eyes of others, and dangerous in their own.

To this cauſe chiefly he was indebted for the rapidity of his riſe to fame; for literary merit, however great, is obliged to ſtand the teſt of time before it meets general approbation, where ſome lucky circumſtance does not concur thus to favour it.

Shocked

Shocked at ſuch a proſtitution, I left him to purſue his own machinations; and, having abundantly ſatisfied my curioſity with military matters, reſolved to change the ſcene of my obſervations, and go to the courts of the powers engaged in war, in hopes that, for the credit of human nature, I might find the meaſures of their civil government deduced from more rational principles than thoſe which appeared to influence the conduct of their armies.

BOOK II.

CHAP. I.

A council ſcene. The mildneſs of female government; with a remarkable inſtance of the happy effect of reproof upon great minds.

THE firſt court which I thought proper to take a view of was that of the power moſt immediately engaged in the war againſt the prince whoſe camp I had juſt left. Accordingly I *wiſhed* myſelf thither directly, to avoid the pain of travelling through the ſcenes of deſolation and miſery exhibited by all the countries around.

On my arrival I found the ſovereign ſeated in council, in the midſt of his miniſters. There appeared in his looks a phlegm, which in different countries is taken to denote the different qualities of wiſdom and ſtupidity; and which here ſeemed to have extended its ſopori-

ſick

ſick influence over all preſent, who ſat with their eyes fixed upon the table, as if waiting in ſuſpenſion of thought for ſomething to ſet their faculties at work.

They had continued in this ſtate for ſome time, when a female entered and placed herſelf at the right hand of the ſovereign. Her features were ſtrong, and, maſculine; ſhe was dreſſed in the robes of independent royalty, and the haughtineſs of her looks and deportment ſhewed that ſhe eſteemed herſelf ſuperior to all the princes of the world.

The moment ſhe entered, the whole council aſſumed a new appearance. The ſovereign looked abaſhed, and the miniſters, rouzed from their former ſerenity, waited for her words with fear and trembling. "I ordered your attendance, (ſaid ſhe, looking fiercely round, the fire of her ſoul flaſhing from her eyes as ſhe ſpoke) to let you know what I will have done in the preſent conjuncture. I will no longer bear to be braved thus by my vaſſals, who by the weakneſs of ſome of my predeceſſors have acquired this unnatural power of rebelling againſt their ſovereign. They ſhall be declared public enemies to the general ſtate, and the reſt of the feudatories obliged to join their forces, according to the ordinances of thoſe who gave them the power they now poſſeſs, to reduce them to their proper ſtate of obedience. When theſe have done that, the troops of my own dominions ſhall humble them alſo. I will no longer be oppoſed by ſuch ingrateful ſlaves; for ſuch they were, and ſuch they ſhall be again. And you, ſir, (addreſſing herſelf to the ſovereign) muſt enforce this ſentence with your authority. The rank to which you have been raiſed by your alliance with me, enables you to do any thing, if you had but proper ſpirit.

Madam, (anſwered the ſovereign) I—I—I can do nothing, You have taken all the power into your own hands, and left nothing for me to do."

Yes, (replied ſhe), with a look of the higheſt contempt) you can drink away your ſenſes; and that is all you mind. Had I been bleſſed with an huſband of ſpi-

rit

rit equal to my own, we ſhould have ſubdued the world. All mankind would have been my ſlaves. But now the work is all my own; you only contribute an empty name."——Then turning to her ſecretary, "Let this decree be notified to all the other vaſſals without loſs of time, that they may prepare to obey it."

"May it pleaſe your moſt auguſt majeſty, (ſaid the ſecretary, making an obeiſance as low as adoration) is this ſentence intended only againſt the principal power with whom you are at war? Or are all his friends, thoſe I mean who have not directly declared againſt you, to be included?"

"All, all; (anſwered ſhe) their preſumption is equal, and ſo ſhall be their puniſhment. Thoſe who even heſitate to obey my commands I hold to be my enemies, and will treat them as ſuch."

"Your moſt ſacred majeſty's commands (replied the ſecretary) ſhould be a law to all the world. Here is a memorial which I have this this day received from the miniſter of his principal ally. It relates immediately to the purpoſe of this your majeſty's moſt magnanimous and juſt reſolution, their conſcious dread of which anticipates your tremendous declaration."

"Let it be read; (ſaid ſhe, impatiently) I will hear what it contains, though all the world ſhall not make me alter my reſolution."

"Far be it from your ſervant to ſuppoſe any ſuch thing; (anſwered the ſecretary) the will of ſo mighty a princeſs ſhould be as immutable as fate. Shall I read the whole, or only give a ſummary of the contents? It is very long: and not always conceived with that reſpect due to your ſublimity, from the other ſovereigns of the earth."

"The ſubſtance of it (replied ſhe haughtily) will be as much as I ſhall hear, and more than I ſhall pay regard to."

"Hem! ahem! In the firſt place, (ſaid he, clearing his voice, and caſting his eye upon the paper in his hand) the memorialiſt preſumes to throw the blame of the

the preſent war entirely upon your majeſty; accuſing you of a deſign to overturn the juſt rights and liberties of thoſe whom he calls the ſovereign princes and independent members of the ſtate; and in conſequence of this accuſation juſtifies the oppoſition made by your enemy, and the aſſiſtance contributed by others to the ſupport of a cauſe common to them all. He preſumes likewiſe to deny and proteſt againſt your irreſiſtible majeſty's undoubted right of employing the authority of his moſt ſerene majeſty, your royal conſort, in a diſpute which interferes not with his ſtate, but belongs entirely to your own hereditary dominions, audaciouſly and directly inſiſting, that inſtead of aiding your majeſty's deſigns, he ought to oppoſe his whole force to defeat them, agreeably to the true intent of the high truſt repoſed in him when he was raiſed to his preſent exalted ſtation. In quality then of ſovereign of other dominions, he takes the liberty to upbraid your incomparable majeſty with ingratitude, aſſerting, that, without mentioning the many obligations conferred upon your royal anceſtors, your majeſty has yourſelf been ſupported on your throne by his aſſiſtance, againſt the efforts of thoſe very enemies of your auguſt houſe, whom you have now moſt unnaturally joined with againſt him, your only firm and effectual ally; and, laſtly, he has the aſſurance to declare, that he will now employ the ſame power in defence of what he calls his own rights, and thoſe of his allies; with which he moſt inſolently adds, that he fears not to humble that ingrateful——"

While the ſecretary was making this recital, every feature of his miſtreſs's face was diſtorted with the different paſſions of pride, rage, and revenge; but theſe laſt words hurried her beyond all patience. "Villain! ſaid ſhe, (ſnatching the memorial from his trembling hand, and throwing it in his face) How dareſt thou repeat ſuch inſolence before me? Obligations to him! he only did his duty; and was overpaid by my acceptance of it. My houſe, the firſt on earth, has a right to every thing in the power of inferi-

or princes, to contribute to its exaltation; nor ſhall any petty, limited ſovereign, preſume to call my commands in queſtion, or cenſure my making alliances with whom I pleaſe. Whatever I will is right; and this I will ſupport againſt all their oppoſition, while I have a ſubject able to draw a ſword."

The vehemence with which ſhe ſpoke theſe words awoke her royal conſort, who was ſo affected by the rebuke ſhe had given him juſt before, that he fell aſleep. "Starting therefore, Hah! What! What oppoſition? (ſaid he, ſtaring about, and repeating her laſt word) What oppoſition?"

"Peace, idiot! ſot! (anſwered his gentle mate) the only oppoſition I regard, is that of your indolence and ſtupidity,"——Then, turning again to the ſecretary, "Draw up the decree (continued ſhe) directly, and enforce, it with every expreſſion of contempt for the writer of this inſolent memorial. I'll ſhew him what regard I pay to his upbraidings; and that I hold the ſervices he values himſelf ſo highly upon, to be all cancelled from the moment he dared to diſobey my ſovereign will in any inſtance."——

Saying this, ſhe aroſe; and, diſmiſſing the council with a motion of her hand, retired, her royal conſort not venturing to ſpeak a word.

CHAP. II.

A ready ſalve for a ſore conſcience, with a proper reward for piety. An unexpected diſappointment ſhews greatneſs of ſoul in a ſtriking light. A day concluded conſiſtently.

FROM council her majeſty went into her own apartment, where ſhe met her confeſſor, who was waiting for her. "I ſent for you, father, (ſaid ſhe) to unburthen my conſcience, which cannot bear the weight of any thing that even looks like a crime. The event of this war not immediately anſwering my expectations,

tations, I have conſented to a propoſal made to me, of having my enemy taken off by poiſon: I have alſo given orders to one of my generals, to march into the territories of thoſe ſtates who refuſed to join with me in the war, and to burn and deſtroy all before him, putting man, woman, and child, to the ſword, to revenge the diſreſpectful manner in which they refuſed to comply with my demands, and ſtrike a terror into others for the future. Now, as I conclude that both theſe orders have been put in execution this morning, I ſent for you to receive abſolution."

"The piety of your moſt ſacred majeſty (anſwered the eccleſiaſtic) is highly commendable, and deſerves the indulgence of the holy church in the moſt unlimited degree. Such things, to be ſure, are in general criminal; but particular circumſtances may change their nature. The urgency of your majeſty's affairs requires diſpatch, and your honour muſt be vindicated. Theſe conſiderations are in themſelves of weight to authorize what elſe ought to be avoided. But there is another reaſon ſtill ſtronger, and which makes the actions that hurt the tenderneſs of your conſcience meritorious, inſtead of reprehenſible. Your enemy is an heretic, and therefore out of the protection of all laws human and divine; and thoſe who refuſed to aſſiſt you againſt him, though not formally heretics themſelves as yet, diſcover by that refuſal a kind of tendency that way, and ſhould be prevented by wholeſome chaſtiſement; the firſt duty of all true ſons of the church being to extirpate hereſy."

Having quieted her majeſty's conſcience by this pious diſtinction, he proceeded to the ceremony of giving her abſolution, which he performed with a ſolemnity and parade equally impious and ridiculous on ſuch an occaſion.

When this important affair was finiſhed, addreſſing his penitent with a look of joy, "I have the happineſs (ſaid he) to congratulate your majeſty on the higheſt honour which can be obtained in this world. Our moſt holy father, in token of his approbation of your

your zeal for the glory of the church, has brought proper to grant you an addition to your titles, which gives you the pre-eminence over all the potentates on earth; and has bleſſed me with the office of impoſing it in his name, whenever your majeſty pleaſes to appoint a time for the glorious ceremonies which his wiſdom has inſtituted for that purpoſe."

"I have a juſt ſenſe of his holineſs's favour, (anſwered ſhe) and ſhall be glad to receive it in the proper manner as ſoon as poſſible, as my whole ſoul is implicitly devoted to the ceremonies of our divine religion."

"To-morrow then (ſaid he) will I perform the ſacred office of this ſecond baptiſm, and give you a title that ſhall be expreſſive of the regard you ſo nobly ſhew at this time for the advancement of the faith; for which purpoſe I will go directly and give orders for adorning the great church with all the precious and coſtly images, and relics of the ſaints and angels, who will look down with pleaſure to behold your majeſty raiſed to a degree of honour ſuperior even to their own. You will pleaſe to command all the great officers of your court to attend, that nothing may be wanting to make the ceremony truly grand."

While her majeſty was preparing for this great affair, my curioſity prompted me to ſee how her royal conſort diſpoſed of his time. As ſoon as the council was broken up, in which he made the important figure that has been related, he haſtened to his own particular apartments, where, throwing off the mockery of royalty with which he was encumbered, he ſat down with ſome of his moſt intimate favourites, to drown the cares of ſtate in wine.

The converſation was ſuited to the occaſion. "For my part (ſaid the ſovereign, filling his rummer) I cannot conceive what pleaſure thoſe people find in politics, and wars, and ſuch like turbulent perplexing matters. I never think of the former, that they do not make my head ake; though the truth is, her majeſty, for the moſt part, ſaves me that trouble. And then, for fighting! I bleſs my ſtars I am no hero;

hero; nor, while I have a bottle of ſuch wine as this before me, envy any of them their laurels."

"It would be happy for the world, (ſaid one of the company, while the ſovereign quaffed off his bumper) if all princes were of your majeſty's way of thinking. The pleaſures of life might then be enjoyed in peace and ſatisfaction."——This turned the diſcourſe naturally on thoſe pleaſures, which they all talked over with the greateſt keenneſs, till it was time to go to the opera, where his majeſty ſeldom failed to ſpend the evening.

His royal conſort, elated at the thought of the mighty things which had been done for her that morning, and of the ſacred honour ſhe was to receive next day, went thither alſo, to indulge the happineſs of her heart; but happening in the courſe of the entertainment to obſerve that her huſband looked with more than common earneſtneſs at one of the female performers, ſhe gave orders to one of her officers to remove her that very night out of her dominions, without permitting her huſband to ſee her, or bearing that any other ſhould interfere with her in the only advantage ſhe reaped from her marriage.

The ceremony of the next day exceeded all deſcription. Every inſtance of pomp, both ſecular and religious, which ſuperſtition and vanity could ſuggeſt, was diſplayed to make the farce complete, without any regard to the danger of offending the Deity by ſuch an hypocritical proſtitution of rites appropriated to his ſervice, and many of them appointed by himſelf.

But the joy of her moſt pious majeſty was ſoon damped. She had flattered herſelf, that the ſcheme for poiſoning her enemy was laid ſo well, and committed to ſuch truſty hands as to be ſafe from diſappointment or detection. On this her confeſſor built ſo ſtrongly that he reſolved to promiſe ſome ſignal and ſpeedy inſtance of ſucceſs, as a divine ratification of her new title. Accordingly, in the oration with which

which he concluded the ceremony, he worked himſelf up into the appearance of prophetic enthuſiaſm, and ventured even to point out the death of her enemy, as if by immediate inſpiration, deſcribing his agonies in a rhetorical flouriſh, and attributing his fate to the hand of Heaven, as a puniſhment for his rebellion againſt his ſovereign.

The effect which this had upon the multitude is not to be expreſſed. Prepared by their natural ſuperſtition to believe every thing their prieſts pleaſed to tell them, they looked for the inſtant accompliſhment of this prediction with ſuch ſtrong faith, that, had the expected news arrived at that time, they would have received it implicitly as a miracle; and moſt probably had fallen down and worſhipped their ſovereign, in whoſe favour it would have appeared to have been wrought.

But, unluckily for the poor prophet, juſt as he had finiſhed his declamation, an account was received that the attempt upon the king's life had miſcarried, and her moſt pious majeſty's privity to it been detected in the plaineſt manner, ſo as to reflect an indelible diſgrace upon her in the eyes of the world; and that her army, which was to have ravaged the territories of his friends, had been repulſed with great loſs, and by a body of ſuch inferior force as to look like the immediate interpoſition of Providence. The conſequence of this may be eaſily conceived. The preacher was aſhamed to ſhew his face: The glorious title was turned into ridicule; and her majeſty was overwhelmed with vexation at her diſappointment.

As ſoon as ſhe had recovered herſelf a little, ſhe ſummoned her council again on this important occaſion. After long deliberation, it was at laſt concluded to give up a conſiderable part of the territories of ſome of her moſt faithful friends, to one of the powers confederate with her in the war, to induce it to exert all its force to oppreſs an enemy from whom they met ſuch unexpected reſiſtance; for, ſo ſtrong was the hatred of her ſoul againſt him, that ſhe would ruin herſelf rather than he ſhould eſcape ruin. As to the charge of being concerned

cerned in the infamous and horrid ſcheme of poiſoning him, ſhe affected to treat it with contempt, as a groundleſs ſlander, to which ſhe diſdained to make any anſwer.

But the ſanguine hopes ſhe built upon this abſurd expedient, which brought into her neighbourhood a rival infinitely more dangerous than the one whom ſhe wanted to deſtroy, were ſoon overthrown. Her expreſſes were ſcarce diſpatched, when ſhe received an account of the death of her ally, upon whoſe aſſiſtance ſhe depended; and from whoſe ſucceſſor ſhe had juſt reaſon to apprehend even worſe than the diſappointment of her hopes, as his avowed attachment to her enemy had engaged her in intrigues againſt his life alſo, which he had diſcovered, and would now moſt probably ſhew his reſentment of, by turning his forces againſt her.

This event diſconcerted all her ſchemes, and ſhewed her that the ruin of her enemy, which ſhe had purſued with ſuch inveteracy, and flattered herſelf with the thought of being ſo near, was now removed farther off than ever, if not abſolutely out of her power to accompliſh. However, the blind implacability of her ſoul was not to be convinced. She reſolved to double all her efforts; ſhe ordered every ſubject in her dominions to take arms; and laſtly propoſed to the profeſſed enemies of her faith, to ſhare with her the conqueſt which they ſhould aſſiſt her to make in a war, alledged to have been undertaken on a religious motive, ſacrificing every obligation, human and divine, to an impotent deſire of revenge; and thus concluded a day hallowed in the annals of her reign, by the reception of her ſacred title.

Such ſcenes were too ſhocking to be dwelt on. I reſolved to leave that court directly; and took the opportunity of travelling with a courier whom her ſacred majeſty ſent to one of her allies, that I might take a view of that part of his dominions in which he reſided at that time, and learn ſomething of the manners of the people with whom I was yet unacquainted.

CHAP. III.

More happy effects of greatneſs; with a new way of puniſhing diſobedience, and making the moſt of power.

THE courier had ſcarce entered the territories of the prince to whom he was ſent, when he was ſeized by a band of free-booters, who, without any regard to his character, dragged him away to their chief. It was late when he fell into their hands; and as they had prowled to a conſiderable diſtance from home, they concluded to ſtop at their own place of habitation till morning.

Nothing could equal the brutal behaviour of theſe ſavages, but their worſe than brutal inſolence, and the miſery in which they lived. They threw their captive into the corner of a hovel, in which the leader of the gang dwelt, among their ſwine and cows; the beſt place in the hut, if any could be called by that title, being reſerved for their horſes, who fared in every reſpect better than their maſters; and then, devouring a meſs of food which any human creatures, not immediately impelled by famine, would have turned from with loathing, lay down to ſleep upon an heap of ſtraw, all mixed together, without any regard to decency or difference of ſex, where they ſnored till next morning; when they aroſe as ſoon as it was light, and licking up what their dogs had left of their over-night's fare, hurried their captive away to their lord.

When they arrived at his caſtle they met him going to his ſtables, and, falling on their knees in the wet and mire with which the whole place was plentifully covered, informed him of their ſucceſs. The courier, without waiting for his lordſhip's making them any reply, addreſſed him boldly, and, telling what he was, complained heavily of the outrage he had ſuffered, and demanded to be ſet immediately at liberty, to purſue his journey, as he was charged with diſpatches of the utmoſt importance to his ſovereign. The air of freedom with which he ſpoke offended the pride of the mighty

mighty lord; but his dignity was ſtruck at by this laſt word in a manner that he did not think proper to bear, for he would not have his vaſſals even ſuſpect that he paid obedience to any power upon earth. "Take hence that ſlave, (ſaid he, without deigning to look at him) and throw him into the dungeon. I'll chaſtiſe him for his inſolence. My ſovereign! A *nobleman* owns no ſovereign." Then turning to his people, who ſtill continued kneeling, "What more have you brought me? (ſaid he) I ſent you word that I was going to attend the great convention of the ſtates, and wanted money."

To this terrible ſpeech the principal of the gang anſwered, that they had no money themſelves, nor were able to get any, though they had ſcoured the whole country in ſearch of it. "Villains! dogs! (exclaimed his lord, flying at the poor trembling wretch, and beating him unmercifully with his horſe-whip) Tell me not that you have no money. You muſt find it for me, or I'll ſell yourſelves, your wives and children, for ſlaves. Be gone; and either bring me money to morrow morning, or every female in your families. I'll make you know that I will be obeyed."

The wretches went away without daring to expoſtulate, while their potent lord ſtrutted off, ſwollen with the thought of having ſo many of his fellow-creatures ſubject to his pleaſure.

As ſoon as he entered his caſtle, he ordered the courier to be brought before him again, and having reprimanded him ſeverely for behaving with ſuch inſolence to a perſon of his importance, diſmiſſed him, now that his own vaſſals, into whom he meant to ſtrike a terror, were departed. Every thing about him was in character. His caſtle, which his own people thought one of the grandeſt palaces in the world, was a mean, incommodious, but indifferently ſtrong place; the furniture, ſome of it rich, but old, aukward, and ill-ſuited, and moſt of the leſſer conveniencies of life utterly wanting; and here was this petty tyrant ſerved with a parade and oſtentation, which were a ſevere though juſt ridicule upon the pomp and vanity of ſtate.

There was ſomething ſo new to me in this ſcene, that I reſolved to purſue it farther. I therefore quitted the courier for the company of this *nobleman*, with whom I ſaw I ſhould have an opportunity of travelling to the court, when he ſhould go to the convention of the ſtates, in equipping his horſes, for which grand occaſion he ſpent the reſt of the day; for on them was all his pride diſplayed.

The next morning produced a ſcene that was a diſgrace to the human name. His wretched vaſſals, in obedience to his dread commands, came with all their mothers, ſiſters, wives, and daughters, for he had made no exception of age or infirmity, driven before them like a herd of cattle to the market. They alſo brought all their worldly ſubſtance, conſiſting of the wretched utenſils of their houſes, their implements of huſbandry, and their cattle, to give in the place of their women, if their lord would be graciouſly pleaſed to accept of the exchange, and let them ſtarve together.

The cries of the females, and the diſtreſs painted in the faces of the men, for they did not dare to complain, are not to be expreſſed; but neither made any impreſſion on their lord, whoſe noble heart was above the vulgar weakneſſes of humanity. "So! (ſaid he ſternly) then you have dared to diſobey my commands, and not brought me the money?"

"Mighty lord! (anſwered an eccleſiaſtic; who had ventured to come as their interceſſor) they have obeyed your commands as far as was in their power, and brought all their women; but money it was impoſſible for them to bring. The armies, which have marched ſo often through the country of late, have plundered them of every thing which they might ſell to raiſe money for your uſe; nor do travellers venture to carry any thing valuable with them in ſuch dangerous times; ſo that they cannot obtain any that way neither. Have compaſſion therefore on their diſtreſs, and tear not from them their families, the only comfort which they enjoy in life. They have brought all their poor ſubſtance." —

While

While the prieſt was making this pathetic addreſs, the lord was viewing his property, and bargaining for them with ſome Jewiſh ſlave-merchants, whom he had ſummoned on the occaſion, and who are always ready to purchaſe ſuch unhappy creatures, to ſell again to the Turks. "It is in vain for you to ſpeak (ſaid he, when he had concluded his bargain) whatever I command ſhall be done; and ſince they have neglected to provide money, their women ſhall go. This will teach them to be more diligent another time. They mind nothing now but dallying with their wives; but they'll do better when they are gone."——Saying this, he made a ſignal to the Jews, who drew out the number they had bought, and, paying down their price, drove them away, without the leaſt regard to their cries and diſtreſs at this violation of all the tendereſt ties of nature.

The horror I felt at this abominable tyranny is not to be expreſſed; nor the gratitude with which I offered up my thanks to Heaven, for the ineſtimable happineſs of living in a country where I was ſecure from ſuch outrages againſt the common rights of mankind. "Too happy Britons! (ſaid I to myſelf, in the overflowing of my heart) did you but know your own happineſs! You live under the protection of laws enacted by yourſelves; under the government of a prince who exerts his power only in acts of benevolence and virtue!"

CHAP. IV.

Account of an uncommon kind of council; with its natural concluſion.

WHEN this important affair was finiſhed, the nobleman ſet out for the convention of the ſtates, with a numerous and grand retinue. The country through which he travelled bore every-where the

ſame appearance with his own territories; the vaſſals in the moſt abject ſlavery and wretchedneſs, and their tyrants in ſlovenly profuſion, and aukward ſplendor.

The convention to which the *nobles* were all at this time going, was one of the moſt glaring inſtances of human abſurdity. It was held in a large plain, where all theſe petty tyrants met on horſe-back, armed, and at the head of their vaſſals, under the ſpecious pretext of deliberating on the public welfare; but how likely they were to promote it is ſufficiently obvious: for if the voice of reaſon is ſeldom heard with reſpect in the beſt regulated aſſemblies, and among the moſt civilized people where every precaution which human prudence can ſuggeſt is taken, to prevent the animoſity inſeperable from difference of ſentiment, from breaking out into acts of violence, what muſt be expected from a number of men like theſe, bred up in lawleſs inſolence and outrage, and gathering together without a rule to direct, or power to controul them, prepared to ſupport their own opinions by force when arguments ſhould fail, let them never be ſo extravagant and unjuſt; what, I ſay, muſt be expected from ſuch a meeting but tumult, confuſion and ſlaughter?

This conſequence was ſo well known to their ſovereigns, that although they could not abrogate a cuſtom hallowed by its antiquity, whoſe ſanction too often makes abſurdity venerable, and which owed its riſe to the moſt barbarous ignorance, they never would conſent to ſo dangerous and ineffectual an expedient, except in times of public calamity, when their licentious ſubjects extorted ſuch a conceſſion from them; for the right of convening them was entirely in the ſovereign, from whom the ſupreme power in its utmoſt latitude was transferred to the collective body of the nobles the moment they met, and for the time of their continuing tother; which, however, was always limited to one day, to obviate their abuſing their truſt.

They aſſembled accordingly at ſun-riſe, and ſeperating from their attendants, who ſtood around them at ſome little diſtance, waited for the arrival of their ſovereign,

to

to explain to them in form the cauſe of his ſummoning them to meet, The time of their waiting was ſpent in forming cabals, fomenting their mutual diſcontents, and ſtimulating each other to ſedition, by aggravating every exertion of the royal authority into a breach of their priviledges, and an encroachment on the liberty of the public; in behalf of which they declaimed with as much vehemence as if they were reſolved to baniſh tyranny from the face of the earth, and reſtore all mankind to their original equality.

At length the ſovereign appeared in a magnificence almoſt exceeding imagination; but his looks ſhewed that grandeur often gilds unhappineſs. Advancing into the midſt of the aſſembly, he opened the convention with a moſt affecting ſpeech, in which he ſet forth the public diſtreſſes in the moſt lively and pathetic colours; and deſired their aſſiſtance to remedy them, with as much condeſcenſion as was conſiſtent with the dignity of his rank.

But it was far from their intention to comply with any thing he ſhould require: they ſcarce gave him liberty to finiſh his ſpeech, when, throwing off all reſpect and reſtraint, an hundred mouths opened upon him at once, accuſing him of being the cauſe of all the public calamities, by the weak and pernicious meaſures of his government; and upbraiding him with tyranny, and a deſign of overturning the liberties of his ſubjects, which he had ſworn to maintain.

The ſovereign, unable to prevent, and, unwilling to hear ſuch indignities, thought proper to retire, and leave them, to purſue their deliberations among themſelves, from which he had never expected any advantage, though their clamours had obliged him to call them together. The event was what reaſon muſt eaſily foreſee. All was tumult, riot, and confuſion. Every one ſpoke at once; and though in the main they all intended the ſame thing, which was to dethrone their ſovereign, that they might act the ravages with impunity, till another could be elected; their ungoverned heat and impatience defeated their deſign, and made them

fall into the ſnares of ſome who were his friends, who deſignedly raiſed a quarrel in which all took part; and in their madneſs fell to fighting, they knew not for what, nor cared with whom, without a poſſibility of their being calmed to conclude upon any thing. Their attendants, whom they brought to awe their ſovereign, thinking it their duty to aſſiſt their lords, joined in the fray, which ſoon became more horrible than any pitched battle, every one murdering his neighbour without diſtinction of friend or foe. Night at length ſeperated the ſurvivors, who, without ever enquiring what had been the cauſe of the quarrel, returned to their reſpective homes, enflamed with the moſt virulent animoſity againſt each other, which they wreaked with a fury that aggravated the public calamities a thouſandfold.

The conſequence of this conſtant end of thoſe meetings, and which only could induce the ſovereign to ſubmit to the hard expedient of permitting them, was, that it generally delivered him from a great part of his enemies, and diverting the rage of the reſt from him for a time, left him at liberty to purſue his own meaſures, with whatever friends he had been able to attach to him; for all their power ended with the day, they having no right to meet again without a new ſummons, which ſuch an event gave him juſt reaſon to refuſe, could they even be reconciled among themſelves to require it.

From this horrid ſcene I went to court, with one of thoſe who had firſt began the quarrel; and having ſlipped out of the danger, as ſoon as he had ſet them together by the ears, haſtened, as ſoon as all was over, to give an account of the event to the miniſter. The pleaſure with which the latter received the ſhocking detail was painful to humanity to behold. He made it be repeated to him over and over, that he might not loſe the minuteſt circumſtance, and then went with the pleaſing news to his maſter.

The moment he came into his preſence, "I congratulate your majeſty (ſaid he, with an air of exultation) on the event of the convention. It has concluded properly

perly in a general broil, in which the greateſt part of your enemies have met the fate they deſerved."

High as the triumph of the miniſter was, he could not communicate his joy to his maſter, "It is a melancholy caſe, anſwered the king, with a deep drawn ſigh) that a ſovereign, who ought to be the father of his people, and ſtudy only their happineſs, ſhould have reaſon to hear ſuch an horrid account with pleaſure."

"I have often told your majeſty, (replied the miniſter) that this injudicious tenderneſs was the ruin of your affairs. Had you let your enemy be taken off in the manner I propoſed before the war broke out, you would have avoided all the misfortunes which you have experienced ſince. There is no being any thing by halves. A *great* man is above the reſtraints which bind the prejudices of weaker people."

"Would to Heaven (returned the king) that I had never aſpired to that wretched character. All the true happineſs of life was in my poſſeſſion, and I was bleſſed with a taſte to enjoy it; but I unhappily miſtook the part nature had deſigned me, and aſpiring at what I could not be, fell from that which I was."

"Why will your majeſty (interrupted the miniſter, with an accent of the moſt engaging tenderneſs and ſubmiſſive expoſtulation) torture yourſelf with theſe vain reflections? Every thing you have done was with the beſt and greateſt deſigns: and if fortune has hitherto frowned upon your attempts, the fault lies not in you; nor ſhould you be diſcouraged by the diſappointment. Perſeverance conquers the greateſt difficulties; and one lucky event may yet put you in poſſeſſion of all your hopes. At any rate, it is beneath you to retreat now. It would argue a dejection more diſgraceful than a thouſand defeats. Reſume your ſpirits therefore, and hope for the beſt. You have many reſources yet, before it can be neceſſary for you to ſubmit to the diſhonour of receiving peace from your inſulting foe; a foe whoſe affairs have been often in a much more deſperate ſituation than your's, till his reſolution retrieved them."

"My dear baron! (anſwered the king, ſomewhat encouraged by this ſpeech) I leave every thing to you. I know your attachment to my Intereſt; I know your abilities, and confide in them. Do you what you think beſt; and may Heaven grant you ſucceſs."

CHAP. V.

Myſtery of favouritiſm. A remarkable inſtance of the art of making the moſt of a misfortune.

THERE was ſomething in the abſolute aſcendancy which this miniſter evidently poſſeſſed over his ſovereign, ſo contradictory to the natural reaſon, and ſpirited ſenſibility, which marked the looks of the latter, that my curioſity led me to take a view of both their characters, that I might ſee by what means it had been obtained.

The prince was deſcending faſt into the vale of years. He looked dejected, and melancholy had thrown over his whole appearance a veil of liſtleſsneſs and diffidence, whoſe gloom obſcured the luſtre of his virtues.

Born to the ſovereignty of dominions on which nature had beſtowed her bleſſings with a bounteous hand, the firſt cares of his life had been exerted to improve them by every aſſiſtance of induſtry and art. The ſucceſs exceeded his moſt ſanguine hopes; encouraged by his ſmiles genius raiſed its head in his court, and every finer art flouriſhed in the ſunſhine of his favour.

So fair a morning promiſed the brighteſt day; but ambition ſoon overcaſt its radiance, and he forfeited thoſe ſolid advantages, to graſp at this crown, more dazzling than his own to a ſuperficial view, but far leſs rich in every real good, without being warned by the fate of his father, who had ſhip-wrecked his happineſs on the ſame rock.

Adorned

Adorned with every virtue that dignifies humanity, he ſeemed deſigned by Heaven to make his people happy; but the exceſs even of theſe virtues produced the contrary effect. He had contracted an intimacy in his earlieſt youth, when the tender mind receives the ſtrongeſt impreſſions, with his preſent miniſter, who was placed in an honourable employment about his perſon by the king his father.

The ſuperiority which a few years advance gives in the beginning of life, generally imprints a reſpect difficult to be got over ever after. This perſon was bleſſed with every qualification which nature could beſtow, to improve the advantages of his ſituation; nor wanted addreſs and care to exert them in their utmoſt force. He ſoon attached the infant fondneſs of his young maſter by every pleaſing art, and, as his reaſon began, to expand itſelf, attracted the reſpect of that alſo, by diſplaying his own ſuperiority in the moſt ſtriking though delicate light.

The talents and diſpoſition of the prince were ſuch as, in the general ſenſe of the world, denominated him rather *good* than *great*; whereas thoſe of his favourite, on the contrary, were all of the other kind, and calculated to make a noiſe and figure in the higheſt ſcenes of life.

In a good mind friendſhip often ariſes from the ſame cauſe which would have produced envy in one of a different caſt. The prince admired the qualities which he was conſcious he wanted himſelf; and as they were never oſtentatiouſly ſhewn in oppoſition to him, ſoon conceived the ſtrongeſt eſteem for their owner, and reſolved to reap the benefit of them, by attaching him to his intereſt. The other, who ſoon ſaw the ſucceſs of his hopes, omitted nothing that could poſſibly improve the influence he had acquired. He ſtudied every turn of his temper, and read his inclinations as ſoon as they aroſe; ſo that he was able to anticipate his very wiſhes.

But the principal thing that eſtabliſhed his aſcendancy beyond a poſſibility of being ſupplanted, was the perſonal attachment, which he ſhewed upon every occaſion for his maſter, whoſe pleaſure appeared to be the only

object

object of his attention and regard; and to which he was ready to ſacrifice the ſtrongeſt ties of nature. Of this he had the good fortune to give an early inſtance of ſuch a nature, as made reaſon and paſſion equally join to confirm his empire over the prince's heart.

He had fallen in love with a moſt beautiful and accompliſhed young lady, heireſs to one of the richeſt nobles of the kingdom, and was ſo happy as to have his paſſion not only returned by her, but alſo approved of by her father.

In the overflowing of his heart, on this joyful occaſion, he deſcribed his intended bride in ſuch rapturous terms to the prince, that he raiſed his curioſity to ſee her, when her charms made ſuch an impreſſion upon his heart, naturally ſuſceptible of every warm ſenſation, that he could not refrain from gazing at her with an earneſtneſs too plain to be miſunderſtood, though reſpect reſtrained them from ſeeming to take notice of it. Inattentive to the conſequence of ſuch an indulgence, the prince repeated his viſits ſo frequently, that the lovers took the alarm, and ſhe feigned ſickneſs, to waive an honour which began to give them pain.

The manner in which he informed the prince of her illneſs opened his eyes to the nature of it. He took the hint in a proper light; and, as he had never had any particular deſign in viſiting her, found no difficulty in reſolving to go no more. But it was eaſier to form than keep ſuch a reſolution. Her beauty had taken too ſtrong poſſeſſion of his heart to be ſo eaſily expelled, and he was actually in love, without having ſuſpected any ſuch thing.

As reſpect had made the favourite conceal his fears, ſo delicacy kept the prince in ſilence alſo. He reſolved to ſubdue his paſſion, however difficult the attempt; nor would ſeem to underſtand a ſuſpicion that implied a doubt of his generoſity. But his behaviour ſoon betrayed the conflict in his breaſt. He grew melancholy, ſought retirement, and particularly avoided the company of his favourite, whoſe happineſs, though

though he would not obſtruct, he could not think of, without pain.

The other immediately perceived the criticalneſs of his ſituation, and was in the higheſt diſtreſs how to act between love and ambition; for he too plainly ſaw that one muſt he ſacrificed, to ſecure the other. While he was in this ſuſpence, an unexpected event decided the difficulty.

The king, whoſe age had not cooled his paſſion, happened one day to ſpeak warmly in praiſe of the young lady's beauty; her lover, who was preſent was ſufficiently acquainted with his temper, to ſee the conſequence of this. He knew that he had been all his life a profeſſed votary of love, and had never ſtopped at any thing, however unjuſtifiable, to gratify his deſires. Convinced, therefore, that he muſt inevitably loſe his miſtreſs, his ready genius ſuggeſted it to him to diſpoſe of her in ſuch a manner as ſhould turn the loſs to his advantage. He inſtantly waited upon the prince, and throwing himſelf at his feet, with an air of the moſt paſſionate and reſpectful tenderneſs, What (ſaid he) is the cauſe of this gloom which hangs upon my prince's brow? What uneaſineſs preys upon his heart, which he conceals from his faithful and devoted ſervant? Say I conjure you, is there any remedy in my power to procure? If my life, if any thing dearer than my life can give you but a moment's pleaſure, ſpeak, and you ſhall ſee that I hold nothing in competition with it."

The prince was ſo ſtruck with this unexpected addreſs, that he had no power to make any anſwer; but his ſilence ſufficiently expreſſed what the other wanted. "It is ſo, (continued he, embracing his knees in a well-feigned rapture) my anxious heart divined aright; the charms of *Louiſa* have attracted your regard. Take her; and may you both be happy. I reſign her to a worthier lover. Let what will be my fate, my happineſs ſhall never interfere with yours."

It is impoſſible to expreſs what the prince felt at ſuch an exalted inſtance of regard. He raiſed him from

from the ground, and embracing him tenderly, "No, my dear baron! (ſaid he, as ſoon as he could ſpeak) I cannot, will not put your attachment to ſuch a ſevere trial. The very offer you have made is a pain to me to hear; and I were the moſt ungenerous of men, ſhould I take advantage of it."

Theſe words, but a few hours before, would have made the baron happy; but circumſtances were altered now, and he was reſolved to complete the obligation, by appearing to beſtow what he could not keep. He therefore repeated his offer ſo ſtrongly, that he at length ſubdued all the prince's ſcruples, and brought him to a compliance which his heart panted for.

CHAP. VI.

Continued. A mirrour for the female mind. Fear and reſentment triumphant over love and virtue.

BUT this was much the eaſieſt part of his undertaking. The prince's inclinations aſſiſted his arguments, but his miſtreſs's were on the oppoſite ſide. She really loved him, and had beſide ſo high a ſenſe of honour and virtue, that it ſeemed in vain to attempt perſuading her to take a ſtep ſo contrary to her principles, and ſo deſtructive to her paſſion. But he was not to be diſcouraged by difficulties. He had conquered his own love, and his opinion of female conſtancy was not ſo high as to make him deſpair of the ſame ſucceſs with her; though he judged that ſome addreſs might be neceſſary to ſave appearances. He went to her, therefore, directly, when he left the prince, and putting on an air of the deepeſt diſtreſs, on her inquiring tenderly what ailed him, burſt into a flood of tears, and turned from her; the regret which he really felt at the thought of loſing her aſſiſting his deſign.

Struck with ſuch ſtrange behaviour, ſhe eagerly aſked him what could be the matter? when, looking wiſhfully in her face for ſome moments, "O Louiſa! (ſaid he) muſt I loſe you? Why have I not power

to

to ſupport my right againſt the lawleſs invaſions of tyranny;"

Good Heaven! (exclaimed ſhe, terrified and amazed) What can you mean? What tyrant invades your right? Or, who ſhould take me from you?"

"And have you not heard of it then? (ſaid he) Has not the mandate yet arrived, that is to tear you for ever from my arms? Give orders to be denied to every one, even to the king. Let them ſay you are ſick, confined to your bed; or any thing, to prevent your being ſeen. I muſt leave you now; but I will return, privately, in half an hour, when it will be dark, and unfold the whole of our misfortunes to you."————Saying this, he left her abruptly, with all the appearance of diſtraction and deſpair.

The aſtoniſhment and terror with which this ſtruck the lady, may be eaſily conceived. She inſtantly gave the orders he deſired, and withdrew to her chamber, where ſhe waited for his return, with the moſt anxious impatience. At length he came; and, being admitted with every alarming circumſtance of caution and fear, after ſome moſt paſſionate exclamations at the ſeverity of his fate, he acquainted her of the king's having unhappily taken a liking to her; the conſequence of which was, that he would certainly enjoy her either by perſuaſion or force.

The character of the king made ſuch a ſtory too probable, eſpecially as a woman wants but little proof of the power of her beauty. She ſeemed aſtoniſhed at the news, and expreſſed the ſtrongeſt concern; but vanity gliſtened through her grief, and the many and particular queſtions which ſhe aſked betrayed a levity at leaſt, which leſſened her in her lover's eyes.

As ſoon as ſhe had recovered herſelf, however, from the firſt emotions of her ſurprize, ſhe aſked if there was no way of eſcaping ſuch a misfortune? and even propoſed an immediate marriage, to prevent it; but he replied, that ſuch a raſh expedient would only provoke the king's reſentment to his ruin, without being

being any protection to her, as he had ſhewed on many occaſions, that he made light even of that ſacred tie, when it interfered with his pleaſures.

When he had let her dwell upon her fears for ſome time, which he ſtill heightened by new circumſtances of danger, from the capricious and cruel temper of the king, whoſe fatal effects, the objects he was one moment fondeſt of often felt the next, the leaſt violent of which was to be immured for life in a convent, he at length anſwered to her repeated intreaties of deviſing ſome way for her to eſcape ſuch a misfortune, that he knew but of one which would prevent the king's deſigns; but at the ſame time would be equally deſtructive to his own hopes.

"O name it! (ſaid ſhe eagerly, terrified to death at the thought of a convent) Name any thing that will ſave me from him; and Heaven will inſpire us with ſome means for acquiring every thing elſe afterwards."

"The prince (anſwered he with a ſigh) the prince alone can ſave you from him."

"Why do you heſitate then to apply to him? (interrupted ſhe eagerly) his friendſhip, his goodneſs will do any thing."

"Say rather his love; (replied he) for that alone can do it."

——"His love! I underſtand you not."

——"Nothing but the love of the ſon can ſave you from that of the father. You muſt inſtantly reſolve, therefore, which you will accept of. The king waſtes no time in courtſhip. He will apply directly to your father, and tempt his ambition with ſome gilded bait; or, if that ſhould not prevail, what ſubject can reſiſt a monarch's power? The miniſters of his pleaſures may be this moment at the gate."

——"Direct me Heaven! Is there no other way, no other method of avoiding this dreadful alternative? Beſide, the prince—he has never declared. What ſhall I, can I do? No! I will die firſt. Let us this inſtant fly this hated place. It were better to live

live in a deſert, than under ſubjection to ſuch tyranny."

——"O my Louiſa! it were happineſs to live any where with you; but, alas! whither could we fly to eſcape his power? We ſhould only heap tenfold ruin on our heads by ſuch an attempt. No! ſince I cannot be bleſſed with you myſelf, let me conſult your happineſs. The prince loves you, paſſionately loves you. His eyes, his whole behaviour has long ſince declared it. He is generous, tender, and conſtant; and with him I ſhall at leaſt have the conſolation of ſeeing you happy: conſider the difference between being dragged away by violence to the loathſome bed of an old imperious tyrant, the beſt releaſe to be expected from which is to be locked up for ever in a convent; and yielding to a young and amiable prince, whoſe heart doats on you."——Then ſeeing that her reſolution began to waver, "I will go (continued he) this Inſtant, and reſign my pretenſions to him; and make him believe that I ſacrifice to his favour what is the effect of irreſiſtable neceſſity; for he knows not of his father's intentions. Do you, O Louiſa! imitate my example, and, appearing ignorant of our misfortune, yield as if from inclination. It will enhance the favour, and eſtabliſh his love on the ſolid baſis of eſteem. I'll go this inſtant and ſend him to you. A moment's pauſe for thought would lead me into madneſs and deſpair. Take care to be denied by every-one but him."

The ſituation in which he left her is hard to be deſcribed. Her love for the baron, her principles of honour and virtue, all reſiſted the complying with the prince; but, on the oppoſite hand, there was no other way of eſcaping from his father; and the baron's making the propoſal raiſed a reſentment that almoſt ballanced her paſſion for him; for ſhe would have had him meet ruin rather than think of parting with her.

In this diſtreſs, ſhe formed a thouſand different reſolutions; but was ſtill unreſolved till the arrival of the

the prince decided the conflict; when the reluctance with which ſhe yielded confirmed him in the opinion of her love for the baron, and conſequently of the greatneſs of the ſacrifice he had made to him, to prevent the leſſening the merit of which, by a diſcovery of the motive, the latter took care to make the prince's amour immediately public; which prevented the king's taking any farther notice of her.

This affair, which in the beginning threatened to ruin the baron in the prince's favour, by this prudent management ſecured it to him for ever. He thought it impoſſible that a man, who had made ſuch a ſacrifice to him, ſhould not be as faithful to his intereſt in every inſtance; and the king, his father, ſoon after dying, he reſigned the reins of government abſolutely into his hands.

CHAP. VII.

Myſtery of favouritiſm concluded. The neceſſary effects of ridicule. Miniſterial uſe of unlimited power; with the natural conſequence of ill-placed confidence.

THE firſt uſe which the new miniſter made of his power was, to traverſe the meaſures, and remove all the miniſters of the late king. To reconcile his maſter to a ſtep ſo contrary to the natural mildneſs and benevolence of his temper, he had long taken every occaſion to decry the underſtanding of the late king, and turn all his ways into ridicule. Every man has peculiarities which will not bear to be ſhewn ſeparately, and in an unfavourable light. Not conſidering that he was guilty of many, equally inconſiſtent, and reprehenſible, the young king had inſenſibly accuſtomed himſelf to find fault with, and deride the oddities and foibles of his father, which his favourite was never weary of diſplaying in the moſt ludicrous light.

The ſting of ridicule is always poiſoned. Though the wound it marks is at firſt ſo ſlight as even to be over-

over-looked, the deadly venom ſoon ſpreads through the whole body, and infects the moſt diſtant parts. From laughing at the late king's foibles, the tranſition was eaſy to hold his moſt ſerious meaſures in contempt. He that was a fool in one thing, could not be wiſe in any; nor were the ſervants, who could proſtitute themſelves ſo far as to miniſter to his folly, worthy of truſt from a wiſer maſter.

The court immediately aſſumed a new appearance. Every office of honour and profit was filled with the miniſter's creatures; while the king, who ſaw only with his favourite's eyes, looked ſo coldly on all who diſdained to enter themſelves into that ignominious liſt, that they forebore coming into his preſence, where they were ſure of being inſulted by thoſe whom but a little before they would have ſcorned even to ſpeak to; and left him invironed with a mercenary band, joined by their common intereſt in a confederacy, to keep honour, truth, and juſtice at a diſtance from the throne.

In the mean time, the miniſter was not at a loſs how to maintain the influence he had acquired. He flattered the king's taſte for pleaſure and magnificence, and diverted his attention from every thing that looked like buſineſs; embarraſſing with innumerable difficulties every motion which he did not immediately ſuggeſt himſelf; while he contrived ſo, as that all his own ſchemes met the readieſt ſucceſs.

The importance which this management gave him, with a prince naturally indolent and voluptuous, is obvious. Sure to be gratified in every thing he liked, he thought himſelf happy in having one upon whom he could ſo entirely depend, to eaſe him of the cares and fatigues of government. Not that his miniſter preſumed to obtrude his opinions directly, or ſeem to dictate to his maſter; on the contrary, he inſinuated his ſentiments with ſuch delicacy and addreſs, that the king miſtook them for his own, and imagined he governed the man who directed his very thoughts.

But this happineſs was far from being ſolid. The affections of the nobles, who were the real ornaments and ſupport of the throne, were alienated from their ſovereign,

ſovereign, by a partiality equally injudicious and diſgraceful; and the people, who ſaw the taxes under which they groaned, and which were more than they were able to bear, laviſhed upon an inſolent favourite and his greedy followers, ſwelled with diſcontent and indignation, which threatened to burſt in a ſtorm that ſhould ſhake the throne; while the miniſter, as if he was impatient for his fate, lived in a magnificence that exceeded even that of his ſovereign, and was an inſult to their miſery.

Nor did he ſtop here. Scorning to have the effects of his power confined within his maſter's dominions, he madly involved himſelf in the intrigues of the neighbouring princes, and entered unprepared into a war in which he had no concern. The conſequence was what reaſon might have foreſeen. His ſovereign was driven from his capital, his country was laid waſte, his cities plundered; his palaces, on which he had expended ſo much care and coſt, ſpoiled of all their magnificence and riches, and his ſubjects compelled to ſerve in the armies of his enemies; and to compleat his misfortunes, his reception from thoſe to whom he fled for refuge, cold and inſolent to ſuch a degree as gave him too juſt reaſon to apprehend their proceeding to actual rebellion, and tearing the crown from his head. Yet amid all this ruin, though evidently the conſequence of his favourite's counſels, the latter ſtill preſerved his aſcendency by the ſame flattery which firſt acquired it, and made him perſiſt in his wild ſchemes, chuſing that he ſhould plunge into the gulph to the brink of which he had brought him, rather than enter into meaſures of accommodation, in the courſe of which his eyes might be opened, and his indignation raiſed to deliver himſelf from ſuch a ſtate of ſlavery, and take the reins of government out of ſuch unworthy hands.

"Unhappy is the people (ſaid I to myſelf, ſhocked at ſo groſs an infatuation) whoſe king is governed by a favourite! Unhappy is the king who lets another ſtand between him and his people; who ſees not with his own eyes, nor is able to redreſs their grievances, and reward their merits from his own experience; but, beſieged by a ſet of ſycophants

phants whoſe aim is to deceive him, is kept in a ſtate of darkneſs and deluſion, till he is awoke from his dream of happineſs by the ſtroke of ruin."

I was diverted from theſe reflections by the entrance of the miniſter to his ſovereign. "I congratulate your majeſty (ſaid he, with an air of exultation) on the moſt fortunate event that could have happened. The king of *Spain* has at length declared for our allies. The wealth and power of that mighty kingdom will overwhelm thoſe haughty Iſlanders, and oblige them to withold the aſſiſtance which has hitherto ſupported the enemy; ſo that you are now delivered from the diſgraceful neceſſity of accepting terms from him."

"Is it poſſible (anſwered the king) that he can have been prevailed upon to break a neutrality which has been ſo advantageous to him? Who has been able to make him take ſuch a ſtep? Or what motives can have urged him to intrude himſelf, as I may ſay, into a war in which he may loſe much, and can gain nothing?"

"The motives, replied the miniſter, which ſhould influence every ſovereign. A generous indignation to ſee the different branches of his own family oppreſſed; and a prudent care to ſtop the progreſs of their enemies in time, before their power ſhould become ſo great as to be dangerous to all their neighbours. All will go now as we wiſh. Your majeſty's enemies will be humbled in the duſt; and you will return to your capital in triumph, ſtrengthened by your victorious allies, to ſubdue this rebellious kingdom alſo, and make it hereditary in your family. Will your majeſty honour me with your preſence this evening, at an entertainment which I deſign on this happy occaſion. I have ſomething to ſhew you that will give you pleaſure. The painter and ſtatuary whom I ſent to Italy are returned, and have brought ſome of the moſt curious and valuable remains of antiquity in their ſeveral arts. There is one in particular moſt remarkably fine. It is a ſtatue of *good fortune*, dedicated by *Marius* on his laſt triumphant return to Rome, from whence he

he had been driven by his enemies. I was juſt looking at it when this account from Spain arrived, and own that I was affected with ſo ſtriking a circumſtance."

"I wiſh it may prove an happy omen; (anſwered the king, ſomewhat elated at the news, and ſtill more pleaſed with the account of the arrival of the painter and ſtatuary) but we muſt hope the beſt. What is it o'clock? I'll go directly. I have a mind to ſee your new acquiſition, and aſk thoſe people ſome queſtions about *Herculaneum*."

Such an infatuation was too groſs. I could bear it no longer; but turned away, ſick at heart, from the mortifying ſight.

CHAP. VIII.

The ſcene changed. A national character. Another great man. Curious account of an inn, with an entertainment of political puffs.

THE motives which the miniſter had alledged for the king of Spain's entering into the war, wore ſuch an appearance of plauſibility, that I reſolved to viſit his court, that I might ſee if all his meaſures were conducted with equal prudence and ſpirit.

I had ſeen enough of the country in which I was, to ſatisfy my curioſity; nor did I deſire to travel again through the ſcenes of military glory, exhibited by thoſe around it. I therefore *wiſhed* myſelf directly into Spain, but at more diſtance from the court, that I might have an opportunity of obſerving the manners of the people, which, I apprehended, ſeldom appear in their genuine colours there.

The firſt thing that ſtruck me, on my arrival, was the poverty in which the middle and lower ranks of the people lived. The real wants of nature are very few; but the conveniencies which human ingenuity has diſcovered to make life more agreeable, (I ſpeak not

not of the vitiated cravings of luxury) and which cuſtom has made almoſt indiſpenſible, comprehend a wider circle. Of theſe they were in a manner as utterly deſtitute, as if they were incapable of the arts which could procure them.

The compaſſion, which ſuch a ſtate of wretchedneſs muſt naturally raiſe, was ſoon turned into contempt, when it appeared to proceed wholly from themſelves. The face of the country ſhewed that nature had moſt amply done her part to make the Inhabitants happy; but every aſſiſtance of their own was wanting: and after a long and profound peace, the defects of idleneſs equalled the ravages of war in other countries. The lands were uncultivated, the cities in ruins, and the people wretched. Yet, amid all this, a pride peculiar to themſelves appeared in every word and action, that made their miſery ridiculous; but then at the ſame time it alſo enabled them to bear it, by diverting their attention from their diſtreſſes to their imaginary importance. They looked upon themſelves as ſuperior to the reſt of mankind; and in conſequence of this opinion ſubmitted without repining to the ſevereſt wants, rather than debaſe their dignity by the exerciſe of any induſtry or art.

While I was making theſe remarks, I happened to take notice of two men, from whoſe converſation I learned that they were going to court. They were Frenchmen, and by their equipage and dreſs appeared to be perſons of diſtinction: but I directly ſaw through their diſguiſe, that they were eccleſiaſtics of the order of the Jeſuits, who concealed their character for a ſpecial purpoſe. My opinion of thoſe religious made me attack myſelf to them without heſitation, as the beſt guides I could poſſibly have.

When I joined them, they were entering the yard of an inn to which they had been directed as the beſt in the town. At the door of it ſat a man who appeared to be in the vigour of life, healthy, ſtrong, and formed for any kind of exerciſe or labour. Though the day was uncommonly hot, he was wrapped cloſe in his cloak, with one leg thrown careleſsly over the other

other knee, and his elbow reſted on a heap of ſtones, which ſeemed to have been piled up as a buttreſs, to ſupport the wall of the houſe, while he lolled back, loſt in the contemplation of his own conſequence.

As the travellers advanced to the door, one of their ſervants called aloud. The Don, without deigning to move a limb, or diſcompoſe the gravity of a ſingle feature, having eyed him for ſome time, vouchſafed to aſk him what he wanted. "We want (anſwered the elder of the two gentlemen) ſome body to take our horſes, and ſhew us into the houſe."

"Yonder is the ſtable (replied the Spaniard, pointing to an hovel half of which was tumbled down and the reſt ready to follow,) you may put your horſes there, and by that time the people of the houſe may be at leiſure to come to you."

"At leiſure! (returned the gentleman impatiently) is not this an inn!" Then calling again, an old woman half naked came out, and going to take his horſe; "What, woman, continued he, vexed at being kept broiling ſo long in the heat) is there no other ſervant beſide you? Where is the maſter of the houſe?"

"Here I am (anſwered the Don, riſing deliberately and adjuſting his whiſkers) what is your buſineſs with me? I ſuppoſe you do not expect that I ſhould wait upon you?"

"By do means, ſir, (ſaid the other, who did not deſire any altercation with ſuch an adverſary;) I only want to have ſome of your ſervants called."

"It is very well; (anſwered the Hoſt) the woman will put your horſes in the ſtable; and you may follow me into the houſe."

The travellers, who directly ſaw into their hoſt's character, thought proper to accept his polite invitation; and attended him into a room, the furniture of which conſiſted of two or three broken ſtools and an old table; but the very wretchedneſs of it proved at this time a convenience; the cracks in the walls drawing an air on every ſide, that was the beſt

beſt refreſhment they ſeemed likely to find in ſuch a place.

When they were ſeated, the gentlemen turned to their hoſt, who had not waited for an invitation to ſit down with them, and aſked him what they could have for dinner. "Sir, (anſwered the other) the houſe is "plentifully provided with every thing, as my wife "will inform you when ſhe comes; I mind not theſe "matters." Then ſtroaking down his whiſkers, with great ſolemnity, "Pray, gentlemen (continued he) "what news is there? I hear the wrath of the king is "kindled againſt the Engliſh; and that he is deter-"mined to extirpate their whole nation: It is a glori-"ous reſolution, and worthy of his power and magna-"nimity. I only wonder, why he has ſuffered them "upon the earth ſo long."

As he ſaid this, the miſtreſs of the houſe entered; and after the cuſtomary cant of being exhauſted by an extraordinary run of company of late, confeſſed that all her houſe afforded was ſome bacon and eggs. "For, (ſaid ſhe) this unlucky war has ruined us all. "We uſed to have fiſh fit to entertain an Abbot, and "flour that made bread white enough for the king's "table; but now we have nothing at all. They "pretend indeed to comfort us, with leave from the "pope to eat fleſh; but they do not tell us where we "ſhall get it. I wiſh thoſe who adviſed his majeſty to "this war, may be the firſt who periſh in it."

"Silence, woman, and mind your own affairs! "(interrupted the huſband, with a tone of authority) "how ſhould you know any thing of peace or war? "Leave thoſe matters to us, who underſtand them."

His wife obeyed the ſovereign mandate without reply, and retired; when he, ſwelling with double "importance from ſuch a triumph, "When we have "ſubdued theſe Engliſh (continued he, addreſſing "himſelf to his gueſts) "We ſhall be better ſupplied "with thoſe things, and many others than ever. "They will be obliged to bring them to us as tribute, "not for ſale; and to perform for us all the ſervile "offices of trade, which it would be a diſhonour to a "Spaniard to defile his hands with. Our ſlaves in

" America work better than when they had their " liberty. Beſide, they are heretics; and it is a ſin, " as well as a diſgrace, to be at peace with ſuch. " Our curate preached us an excellent ſermon to this " effect, laſt Sunday; when, among other things, he " told us, that all the catholic powers had at length " agreed to join and root them out. It is a glorious " and a pious undertaking. Since the holy wars there " has been nothing like it."

As their ſumptuous fare required not much time for preparation, the entrance of it interrupted this magnanimous politician here, at which he ſeemed not better pleaſed than the travellers were with their entertainment.

While they were refreſhing themſelves as well as they could, I took the opportunity of going to ſee the town, the inhabitants of which I found moſt exactly characterized by the innkeeper and his wife; all thoſe who applied to any kind of induſtry repining, like her, at the war; and the drones of ſociety, who ſtarve in idleneſs, vapouring with him of conqueſt and glory.

CHAP. IX.

Wheels within wheels. Certain great tranſactions deduced from unſuſpected cauſes; with the advantage of having two ſtrings to a bow.

AS ſoon as the heat of the day was abated, the travellers continued their journey, when the elder addreſſing himſelf to his companion, " You ſeemed " ſurpriſed (ſaid he) at the odd compoſition of our " hoſt; but a little acquaintance with theſe people " will make it familiar to you. Pride and poverty " are the characteriſtics of this nation, not only in his " low ſphere, but alſo in the very policy and govern- " ment of it, in which they maintain a ſtruggle that " makes them juſtly held in contempt by the reſt of " the world."

" If that is the caſe, (anſwered the other) I am the

" leſs

" leſs ſurpriſed at their entering thus madly into a war,
" for which they appear to be ſo ill-provided; though,
" I own, the caution with which they avoided it ſo
" long gave me a better opinion of them; and I ſhould
" be glad to know what motives induced them to alter
" a conduct which they ſeemed to underſtand the ad-
" vantages of ſo well."

" The meaſures by which moſt of the nations in
" the world are governed (replied the former) are ſo
" inconſiſtent not only with reaſon and juſtice, but
" even with themſelves, each day producing a new
" ſyſtem contradictory to the laſt, that you muſt not
" expect a ſatisfactory account of them. As an in-
" ſtance of this, the motives of the Spaniards for en-
" tering into this war are hidden, even from the per-
" ſons who think they are the authors of it; and who,
" unknown to themſelves, are ſerving a cauſe which
" they had rather ruin.

" It may be neceſſary to explain this to you. The
" jealouſy which the power of our order has for ſome
" time raiſed in the very courts whoſe favour princi-
" pally exalted it to that power, has at length burſt
" upon us in a ſtorm, not to be reſiſted in Portugal,
" and threatened not much leſs in France. To avert
" this misfortune required the utmoſt addreſs. Our
" influence in Spain, though rather in decline, is ſtill
" conſiderable. This we obliquely propoſed to the
" French miniſtry, to exert in their behalf, to bring
" the Spaniards to aſſiſt them in a war under which
" they were ready to ſink, on condition of their pro-
" tecting us from any farther diſturbance in France;
" which they accordingly have promiſed.

" The lure, which we held up to the Spaniards, to
" draw them into a meaſure ſo contrary to their in-
" tereſt, was the crown of Portugal. We know, by
" experience, that it was not poſſible to make the
" court of Liſbon break with the Engliſh. We there-
" fore firſt inflamed the ambition of the Spaniſh mini-
" ſtry, by blazoning their king's claim to the Portu-
" gueſe throne in the ſtrongeſt colours; and perſuad-
" ing them that this was the proper opportunity for
" aſſerting it, when the hearts of the people were

" alienated from their ſovereign by the diſaſters of his " reign, and the Engliſh ſo taken up with the wars in " which they were already engaged, that they could " afford him no protection, though he was ſo bigotted " to their alliance, that he would certainly give a " colourable pretence for attacking him, by refuſing " to enter into the confederacy againſt them. Our " ſcheme was ſucceſsful. The Spaniards, without " conſidering farther, broke with the Engliſh, and we " obtained the protection, for a time at leaſt, which " we deſired in France.

" But this was not our only motive for urging this " court to take theſe meaſures. The wound we have " received from Portugal is not to be forgiven, nor " to be healed but by the ruin of that monarchy. If " the Spaniards ſhould be able to eſtabliſh the claim " which we have ſpirited them up to aſſert, our re- " venge will be amply gratified; though could we " even foreſee the contrary, that would make no " alteration in our meaſures. The war itſelf, be the " event what it will, muſt in ſome degree wreak our " vengeance, and be of farther ſervice to us, by " diverting to other objects an attention that boded " unfavourably to our hopes.

" Weighty as theſe reaſons were, we had others " ſtill of greater importance, which we purſued with " a policy ſo deep as to defy detection. You know " that the great object of our attention has long been " to eſtabliſh an independency in ſome part of the " world. A thorough knowledge of the preſent cir- " cumſtances of Europe convinced us, that we muſt " not think of ſuch a thing there. We therefore " naturally turned our eyes to America, where the " weakneſs of the poſſeſſing powers was a temptation " as ſtrong as the riches and fertility of their poſ- " ſeſſions. By both theſe the dominions of Portugal " were from the beginning marked out for our at- " tempt; to give ſucceſs to which we have, for near " half a century, been labouring to make that crown " break with England. In that caſe, we ſhould have " immediately joined with the latter, and, by giving " them a ſhare of the ſpoil, gained the aſſiſtance of

" their

" their naval force, to execute our deſigns. But the " Portugueſe were too wary, and for once underſtood " their own intereſts too well to go ſo far, though we " abſolutely led them, in many inſtances, to act in " ſuch a manner to the Engliſh, as would have drawn " the reſentment of a people leſs prudent upon them.

" Being diſappointed in this our firſt ſcheme, all " that remained for us to do was, to make the like " attempt upon the Spaniards, againſt whom we in- " tended to turn the ſame weapons at a proper time; " and doubt not but, by the help of the Engliſh, we " ſhall be able to accompliſh our deſign of erecting " an empire in ſome part of their American dominions, " while they are purſuing the chimerical claim we " have ſet them upon here, and wreaking our revenge " upon Portugal. As to the equity of theſe meaſures, " that never comes into queſtion till after the event. " If they are ſucceſsful, no one will deny it; if not, " they will be condemned, though dictated by the " voice of Heaven. Thus you ſee that, at any rate, " the war muſt anſwer ſome of our purpoſes, at the " ſame time that we do not appear to be in the leaſt " concerned in it."

" I am much obliged to you for this account, (ſaid " the younger) which ſufficiently explains the motives " of your engaging ſo warmly in matters apparently " ſo little intereſting to you. I ſhould be glad alſo to " know by what arguments you can have perſuaded " the court of Spain into meaſures evidently ſo con- " trary to their intereſt. The voice of the people, " who ſeldom judge wrong, is loud againſt the " war."

" Gold, my friend! (anſwered the other) Gold, the " great perſuaſive of the world, was the argument we " made uſe of. This was the weight which ſet the " main ſpring of the machine in motion. The ſpe- " cious pretexts indeed that covered it were prudence " and honour, which a proper application to their " natural vanity made the croud receive without " examination; not to omit religious prejudice, that " abſolute tyrant of weak minds.

" We perſuaded them, that it was a derogation

" from their honour to ſee a prince, ſo nearly allied " to their mighty monarch as the king of France, " diſtreſſed in ſuch a manner; that his conquerors, if " not ſtopped in time, would fall upon them next; " and that it was ſerving the cauſe of God, to attack " heretics. By theſe various arguments we have " gained our great point of making them break with " the Engliſh; but our trouble ended not there. It " will require equal addreſs, and infinitely more pains, " to keep up their ſpirits, and prevent their quitting " it as poorly, as they undertook it raſhly. This is " the occaſion of my coming here at this time; and " as the bright abilities you are known to poſſeſs, and " the ſtrong attachment you have to our cauſe, have " made the whole order expect the greateſt things " from you, I choſe you for my companion and " aſſociate, and have given you this general view of " the preſent ſtate of affairs here, to direct your own " obſervations in the courſe of our moſt delicate and " difficult negociations, and enable you to act in caſe " any thing ſhould happen to me."

This account, which I have here thrown together, was the ſubſtance of ſeveral different converſations, during their journey to Madrid.

CHAP. X.

More great matters. Home truths. A character out of nature; with a new definition of the laws of war; and a certain method of reducing a nation to obedience.

THE morning after they arrived, the elder went to wait upon the firſt miniſter. The ſilence and ſolemnity which reigned through the whole court ſtruck me with reſpect. " Certainly, (thought I) the " Jeſuit muſt have miſrepreſented theſe people. In- " ſtead of the hurry, noiſe, and giddy buſtle, ſo " offenſive in other courts, every thing here bears " that appearance of ſerioufneſs, which is the ſhadow " of wiſdom."

The

The firſt ſight of the miniſter confirmed me in this opinion. He was dreſſed in black cloaths, whoſe hue added a gloom of additional gravity to his whole appearance. By his looks and motions, his ſoul ſeemed to be wrapped in the moſt intenſe thought. His eyes were fixed; his features all ſtrained to the ſtrongeſt attention, and his ſteps ſlow and ſtately.

When the ceremonials of addreſs were performed with proper punctuality, and the attendants diſmiſſed, the Jeſuit entered directly upon buſineſs. "I am "come (ſaid he) according to your excellency's deſire, "to ſettle every thing that may have been omitted, "and conclude the treaty; for which purpoſe I have "brought the proper powers from his majeſty my "maſter; who has alſo honoured me with the pleaſing "office of delivering to you ſome particular tokens of "his eſteem."

"I am obliged to his majeſty; (anſwered the Don, "with an air of more than miniſterial importance) "he does me juſtice in believing that my inclinations "are to ſerve him; tho' what I have undertaken is "really moſt difficult, if not dangerous. We have "declared war as you deſired; but how we are to "carry it on is hard to ſay. Our magazines are "empty, our troops not half compleat, and even "theſe undiſciplined and badly provided; and our "marine, far from being in a condition to cope with "that of the enemy; ſo that really I am almoſt afraid "to look forward to the conſequences."

"Your excellency will pardon me for ſaying (re- "plied the Jeſuit) that your apprehenſions are too "ready; you have money, and that will ſoon procure "every neceſſary of war. The wealth of our enemies "alone overpowers us; but with the addition of "yours we ſhall be as much too powerful for them. "You will have the honour of ſerving us in ſo critical "a conjuncture; nor is there any danger in the "attempt. They are tired of the war, and want a "pretence for making peace, as much as we want a "peace itſelf. The inconſtancy of their temper, never "long pleaſed with any thing, is ſurfeited with ſuc-

" ceſſes. To take the advantage of this humour, " our emiſſaries have ſet their miniſters together by " the ears in ſuch a manner, that they think of " nothing but ſupplanting each other; to effect which " they would willingly ſacrifice every intereſt of their " country.

" Of this I can give you an inſtance, that will " remove every doubt. Their king having lately " thought proper to change his miniſtry, thoſe who " were turned out, from a ſpirit of reſentment, move " heaven and hell to blacken the characters and decry " the abilities of their ſucceſſors; and, as diſgrace " with the prince is the ſure means of favour with the " people, exert their popularity with the utmoſt " licentious boldneſs to make them diſtruſted, and " defeat their meaſures, chuſing to undo all their own " work, and loſe every advantage gained by the war, " rather than their rivals ſhould have the honour of " bringing it to an happy concluſion; while the latter, " with equal judgment, think it neceſſary for them to " retort the abuſe, and act directly contrary to the " ſyſtem of the others, as it were in juſtification of " their removal; as if a king were the only maſter " who had not a right to change his ſervants when he " pleaſed; and thus, while this altercation goes on, " the buſineſs of the nation ſtands ſtill.

" Advantageous as this is to us, it is not the only " good effect we promiſe ourſelves from theſe diſputes. " The old miniſtry, who purſued the war ſo obſti- " nately while they had the management of it them- " ſelves, will, by this indiſcriminate oppoſition to all " the meaſures of the new, force them into a peace " on any terms, to preſerve their power; for however " finely it many ſound in ſpeculation, a miniſter who " will ſacrifice his own ambition to the intereſt of his " country, and reſign his power to his rival rather " than have the buſineſs ſuffer by a competition for " it, is a character if not abſolutely out of nature, " yet ſo rarely to be found, that there is no neceſſity " to guard againſt it; ſo that both parties equally " ſerve our intereſt, by their animoſity againſt each " other.

" From

" From this plain ſtate of the matter, you may ſee " that you run no hazard in joining with us, as a " peace muſt neceſſarily and ſpeedily be the conſe- " quence of the meaſures we have taken; and what- " ever expence you may be at, will be amply paid by " the conqueſt of Portugal, which you will never " have ſuch another opportunity of annexing to the " crown of Spain, if you miſs this: beſides that ſo " cloſe a connection between your court and ours, " will henceforward enable them to give law to the " reſt of Europe, and yours in particular, at a proper " opportunity to recover the many parts of your do- " minions which have been torn from them, in the " former diviſion of our intereſts."

" According to your reaſoning then (ſaid the Spa- " niard) there is no neceſſity for our making any ex- " traordinary efforts but in Portugal, which I am very " glad of, as we were never ſo unprepared."

" No! (anſwered the Jeſuit) nothing extraordinary; " or that can be attended with inconvenience is ne- " ceſſary. But ſtill, ſomething muſt be done, if only " to ſave appearances. Your laying ſiege to Gi- " braltar—"

" Gibraltar! (interrupted the miniſter) that is im- " poſſible! abſolutely impoſſible! We are as well able " to beſiege the whole iſland of Britain, as Gibraltar. " We have no proviſions made which could give the " leaſt hope of ſucceſs to ſuch an attempt."

" Your excellency is too precipitate; (anſwered the " jeſuit) Succeſs! If by ſucceſs you mean taking it, " I never thought of any ſuch thing. No! All we " propoſe is to raiſe a ferment in England, and give " their miniſtry an excuſe for making a peace. We " are ſufficiently ſenſible that it cannot be taken."

" But if we ſhould make this feint, (replied the " miniſter) do you really think the Engliſh will ever " ſuffer us to conquer Portugal? They are bound, by " intereſt as well as honour, to defend it."

" I grant they are, (returned the jeſuit) but that " ſignifies nothing. Set but their miniſtry to wrang- " ling among themſelves, and you may bring them

" into any thing. Their deſertion of the Catalans, on " a ſimilar occaſion, is an inſtance of what the Por- " tugueſe may expect by depending on them."

" Why, indeed, that is an encouragement, (ſaid the " other) and therefore we will do all we can to be " ready to take the advantage of it."

" I am glad to find that affairs go on ſo well in " Portugal, (ſaid the jeſuit) the people, as I travelled " through the kingdom, are full of ſpirits at the good " news; and every one eager to have a ſhare in the " conqueſt."

" Yes! (anſwered the miniſter) if they could get it " by vapouring at home. As to the good news, it " is neceſſary to propagate ſuch, to amuſe the popu- " lace; but, in reality, our troops advance but very " ſlowly, and meet difficulties every day, which we " did not foreſee. If the aſſiſtance promiſed us by " your court does not arrive before the Engliſh join " the enemy—"

" Aſſiſtance! (interrupted the jeſuit) Never let it be " ſaid that the mighty monarch of Spain wanted " aſſiſtance to over-run the little kingdom of Portugal. " It would be an indelible diſgrace to your honour to " accept aſſiſtance. As to the Engliſh, I have told " you already how they will be taken off; and then " you will have the Portugueſe entirely at your mercy. " But has your excellency conſidered of the advice I " took the liberty to hint to you, of extirpating the " preſent race of inhabitants by every ſeverity autho- " rized by the laws of war, that is, by every method " which the conquerors pleaſe to make uſe of. Their " hatred to your nation is ſuch, that it is impoſſible " ever to reduce them to a proper degree of ſubjection " and loyalty. Above all things, there ſhould not be " one of the race of the preſent king or even of the " nobility left, as experience ſhews that they will " watch every opportunity to revolt, and aſſert an " independency, in the ſame manner as this family " gained the crown by rebellion."

" What you ſay (anſwered the miniſter) agrees " entirely with my own opinion. I had reſolved upon " this from the firſt moment I thought upon the war.

" I am

"I am juſt now going to attend the king, and, as "matters of ſuch conſequence cannot be conducted "with too much caution, will obtain an order ex- "preſsly to that purpoſe, under his own hand, to the "general of his forces, to vindicate me from the "odium of ſuch an unpopular meaſure. His natural "turn is to cruelty, ſo that he will moſt gladly take "the hint. In the mean time, you may aſſure his "majeſty of France of every ſervice in my power, "to humble his haughty enemy, and procure him the "peace he deſires."

Satisfied with the ſucceſs of his negociation, the jeſuit then withdrew, and the miniſter compoſed his countenance into proper gravity, to appear in public.

The natural pride and oſtentation of the Spaniards at firſt made me ſomething ſurpriſed at the freedom and candour with which the miniſter confeſſed the weakneſs and wants of the Spaniſh government: but a moment's reflection explained his conduct, and ſhewed that he acted with the ſtricteſt conſiſtency of character. He had ſuffered himſelf to be gained by bribery, to ſerve the intereſts of France, and therefore could not pretend to aſſume a conſequence, or make a vain parade of power which he could not exert, to the very agent who had corrupted him, and was beſide as well informed as himſelf.

CHAP. XI.

A peep behind the curtain. Royal amuſements; heroic principles and valour; with an approved ſhield againſt certain terrible dangers.

WHEN the miniſter had gone through the ceremonies of his levee with proper dignity, he went to his maſter. The king appeared to be in the prime of life, hale, ſtrong, and active. He was ſeated at a table with a parcel of ſhuttle-cocks before him and mending a racket with as much earneſtneſs as a ſchool-boy of ſeven years old.

The

The moment he raiſed his eyes from his work, and ſaw his miniſter, "Come (ſaid he, ſtarting up, and "ſtripping himſelf to his ſhirt) I have been waiting "for you ſome time. I'll try if I cannot beat you "more ſhamefully to day than I did yeſterday."

The miniſter, who knew his cue, forgot all his gravity in an inſtant, and following the royal example ſet him, threw off his cloaths alſo, and, taking up a racket, prepared for the attack, which he ſeemed to maintain with as much eagerneſs and delight as his maſter, till he ſaw him begin to be tired, when, feigning himſelf unable to ſtrike another ſtroke, he dropped the racket out of his hand, and ſat down puffing and blowing on the floor, while the king, to ſhew his ſuperior abilities, and inſult his antagoniſt, gave half a dozen ſtrokes more by himſelf.

As ſoon as they had recovered their breath, and put on their cloaths, "May it pleaſe your majeſty, (ſaid "the miniſter, reſuming his ſolemnity) I have juſt re-"ceived an account from Portugal. Your invincible "arms bear all before them, and will ſoon reduce the "whole kingdom. They have already taken a con-"ſiderable village, and burned two farm-houſes."

"Have they ſo? (interrupted his ſacred majeſty) "that's well done. Send them orders to burn all "before them. I wiſh I was with them. I love ſuch "ſport in my heart. I'd ſoon make their king rue his "refuſing my friendſhip. But how ſoon will they take "Liſbon? I long to go there, and ſee how it looks "after the earthquake, whether it is any thing like "Herculaneum."

"Your majeſty's army is advancing toward it, "(anſwered the miniſter) but the roads are bad, and "the country-people oppoſe them, ſo that they are "obliged to march with great circumſpection."

"Why do not they ſhoot them? (replied the "monarch) If I was there, not one of them ſhould "eſcape. I'd kill them all myſelf, as I'll ſhew you "juſt now. The enemy is drawn up ready for bat-"tle, and I only waited for you to ſee me attack "them."

Then

Then going into another apartment that looked into a close court, and leading his minister to the window, "There they are, (continued he, laughing "with delight, as he pointed to a number of cats "which were immured in the court;) there is the "army of the enemy. The red ones are English, "the rest are Portuguese. Go, reach me those guns "yonder. I'll attack them directly. It will be a "glorious surprize. While I shoot with one gun you "shall load the other, so that we'll keep up a constant "fire."

With these words he began the attack, shouting in triumph at every shot, "There falls an Englishman. "There a Portuguese! Now I charge them on the "right; now on the left; now in the front; now in "the rear. I'll shew them that I am a general. See "how they run! helter skelter, pell mell."

His heroic majesty carried on his attack in this manner with such eagerness, and continued it so long, that his minister was more tired of loading for him, than he had been of his match at shuttle-cock; at length, observing that one of the wounded cats screamed in an uncommon manner, "A truce! A "truce! (said he) your majesty should slacken your "fire. The enemies acknowledge your victory, and "send a trumpet to desire leave to bury their dead. "According to the laws of war, that is never refused: "beside, if you kill them all to-day, what will you do "for an army to attack another time? There is not "one cat left in all Madrid; your majesty's wars have "consumed the whole species."

"Well then, (said the victorious monarch, who "was by this time sufficiently fatigued himself) I will "grant them a truce; and do you take care that "there is a supply of provisions sent them. Their "magazines I imagine are nearly exhausted; I scorn "to starve my enemies. Hah! hah! hah! Don't "you think now that I could kill all those Portu-"guese? Egad I'll go and head my army myself, "as I did once before, and not let one of them "escape."

The

The ſmoak of the monarch's artillery, and the ſcreaming of the wounded cats making the field of battle not a very agreeable place to ſtay in, the king and his miniſter returned to the cloſet. As ſoon as the latter had once more compoſed his features, "May it "pleaſe your Majeſty, (ſaid he) by the accounts from "your invincible army in Portugal I find, that it is in "vain to think of reducing that people to ſubjection "and obedience. Thoſe who ſubmit one day rebel "again the next; ſo that there is no end of giving "them quarter. Beſide, the Engliſh are expected e-"very day to land to their aſſiſtance, and then their "numbers may prove troubleſome. I am therefore "come to know what orders you will pleaſe to ſend "to your generals, to direct their conduct."

"Orders! (anſwered his moſt ſacred majeſty) to "put them all to the ſword; that is the ſureſt way to "make them obedient. As for the Engliſh, we muſt "take care what we do with them: they are all he-"reticks, and magicians, and deal with the devil. I "remember very well how they frightened me once "before, till I got the pope to bleſs my night-cap; "and then I defied them and their witchcraft too. "They could do me no harm while I had that on. I "am ſorry that it is worn out, or I would go and have "a ſtroke at them myſelf; but I could never bear to be "one minute without it, while there hung a rag of "it together. However, I'll ſend to him for another; "and, at the ſame time it would not be amiſs to ſend "enough for the whole army, and his holineſs might "bleſs them all together; and when the ſoldiers have "got them, they'll be a match for the heretic Engliſh, "and the devil to help them."

"What your majeſty ſays is extremely right, (re-"plied the miniſter) and it would be very improper for "you to hazard your ſacred life, before you have got-"ten ſuch an infallible defence to guard it. In the mean "time though, will your majeſty pleaſe to ſend orders "to your generals, for putting the country under "military execution? They will have double weight, "when under your own hand."

"Aye!

"Aye! (returned the gracious monarch) Give me "pen and ink, and I will write to them this inſtant, "to burn and deſtroy all before them, and put man, "woman, and child to the ſword, without mercy or "diſtinction. Or, ſtay! It will do as well after the "puppet-ſhew; I am in haſte now: and, do you hear! "Order publick rejoicings to be made; and ſend to "the biſhops to ſing *te Deum* for what we have already "done."

It was ſome time before I could recover myſelf from the aſtoniſhment and horror with which this ſcene ſtruck me. "Juſt Heaven! (thought I) are theſe thy "ſubſtitutes on earth? Can the vices of man have "ſunk him ſo entirely below thy care, that he ſhould "be given up thus to the moſt deſpicable deſtruction? "be made the play-thing of a fool, and ſlaughtered "for his meer amuſement? I can bear the ſight no "longer."

Saying this, I flung out of the court, in honeſt indignation, and *wiſhed* myſelf directly into France, in hopes of being relieved by the contraſt between the manners of that diſſipated, gay people, and thoſe where I was. "If I muſt be among fools, (ſaid I) let them "be merry ones. Let not the affectation of wiſdom "make folly more diſguſting."

CHAP. XII.

Scene changed. Pleaſant inſtance of the power of example. Grand attendance at a lady's toilet. Secrets of favouritiſm.

THE effect which I felt from this change is ſcarce to be conceived. The ſmile of pleaſure and complacency that ſoftened every face I ſaw, ſoon diſpelled the gloom which I had contracted in the late ſolemn ſcene, and infected me alſo to ſuch a degree, that my features began inſenſibly to relax into a grin, and I could hardly keep my feet from capering as I went along with the croud, whom I found going to pay their court to the king's miſtreſs.

They

They all ſtopped in the antechamber to her apartments, where they waited with the moſt complaiſant patience for the return of the favoured few who were admitted into her preſence, to learn from them the modes of thought and action which ſhe pleaſed to preſcribe for the day.

Curious to ſee a perſon who was able thus to rule the happineſs of ſo many, I entered the dreſſing-room, where I found her at her toilet, attended in a manner that exceeded my imagination, accuſtomed as I was to uncommon ſcenes. At her feet kneeled a biſhop, in all his ſacred robes, buckling her ſhoes. The baſon in which ſhe waſhed her hands was held by a peer of the firſt rank. A counſellor of the parliament painted her cheeks. A farmer of the revenues ſet her jewels in order. A general powdered her hair. An admiral tied her ribbons; and, to entertain her, a cardinal read a looſe lampoon.

When this important work was finiſhed ſhe aroſe, and, rewarding her happy ſervants with a gracious nod, retired with the cardinal into another room, to talk upon buſineſs. As ſoon as they were alone, "Your "ladyſhip, I think, (ſaid the cardinal, laughing) has "been grandly waited on this morning. Pray, have "you the ſame attendance every day?"

"If I would receive it, (anſwered ſhe) I might "have ten times more. There is nothing ſo fulſome "that thoſe ſycophants will not ſay; nothing is ſo "ſervile that they will not do. I know the baſeneſs "of their ſouls, and therefore trample them thus un-"der my feet, to anticipate the inſults which I am "ſenſible they would heap upon me on any reverſe of "fortune. As they worſhip the ſun-ſhine of court-fa-"vour, it is but juſt to let them toil in the heat of it "for a while."

"But how did your ladyſhip gather ſuch a groupe? "(interrupted the cardinal who ſeemed not much to "like ſome part of what ſhe ſaid, and therefore was "deſirous to put a ſtop to reflections ſo general) Al-"moſt every profeſſion in the ſtate had a repreſenta-"tive at your toilet."

"Yes, (replied ſhe) and I deſign to ſet moſt of theſe "repre-

" repreſentatives at the head of their profeſſions too,
" which was the occaſion of my deſiring to ſee you
" this morning."

" But does your ladyſhip know (ſaid the cardinal)
" whether they are qualified to fill thoſe places? Ma-
" ny of them require particular judgment and expe-
" rience."

" Qualified! (interrupted her ladyſhip, with a con-
" temptuous ſmile) Yes; I have taken care to be ſa-
" tisfied, that they all have the qualifications I want;
" and as for any other, they are anſwerable them-
" ſelves; ſo let them take care of that. I am to give
" them all their definitive anſwers this morning; ſo if
" you will go into that cloſet, you may over-hear what
" paſſes, and will be a judge of their qualifications."

The cardinal obeyed; and her ladyſhip ringing for one of her attendants, ordered him to let the general know ſhe was at leiſure to ſpeak with him.

As ſoon as he entered, " Well, ſir, (ſaid her ladyſhip,
" cutting ſhort all compliments, and entering directly
" upon buſineſs) I have ſpoken to the miniſter about
" you, and am ſorry to find there are ſo many ob-
" jections made, that it will be neceſſary for me to ex-
" ert my utmoſt intereſt to ſerve you. However, as I
" have undertaken it, I will not be foiled."

" I am under infinite obligation to your ladyſhip,
" (anſwered the general) and ſhall endeavour to make
" a return."——

" Sir, (interrupted ſhe) the return I expect is a
" punctual performance of your propoſal; which was,
" to give me two thirds of all (excluſive of your pay)
" that you can poſſibly make by this commiſſion, as
" well what you can ſubſtract from the ſuperfluous ap-
" pointments of your own army, as the plunder and
" ſpoil of the enemies. You remember, ſir, that this
" was your own propoſal."

" I do, Madam, (anſwered he) and ſhall faithfully
" perform it, though really the appointments of the
" army at preſent are ſo very ſhort, and even theſe ſo
" badly ſupplied, that I fear what may be ſaved from
" them will not anſwer your expectation, though I
" will do what I can; in an enemy's country ſoldiers

" may

" may ſhift for themſelves. But whatever this falls " ſhort ſhall be made up in the other article. The " enemies have had a long opportunity to enrich them- " ſelves, which will turn out well to your account " now. I'll ſtrip them to the ſkin for you. It is good " policy to ruin an enemy's country which we do not " deſign to keep poſſeſſion of; as it diſables them from " making head again for a conſiderable length of " time. I hope alſo to conduct the military operati- " ons of the campaign in ſuch a manner, that your " ladyſhip ſhall not be aſhamed of having recommend- " ed me to the command."

" As to that, ſir, (replied ſhe) it is no affair of mine. " You are to take care of that upon your own account; " and I wiſh you may, if it were only to diſappoint " the preſages of thoſe who oppoſed your promotion; " ſome of whom went ſo far as to ſay, that you were " deſtitute of every qualification neceſſary for ſo im- " portant a charge."——Saying this, ſhe turned from him, leaving him to enjoy the pleaſure of meditating on her laſt words."

The departure of the general made way for the entrance of the admiral, who was ſummoned next, and whom her ladyſhip addreſſed with as little ceremony as ſhe had ſhewn to the former.

" You have been recommended to me, ſir, (ſaid ſhe) " by one of my women, to whom, I underſtand, you " have the honour of being related, as a proper perſon " to be entruſted with the command of a fleet, to cruize " upon the enemy; and, on her vouching your merit, " I have got you preferred before ſeveral officers of " known ability."

" I am eternally devoted to your ladyſhip, (anſwered " he, elated at his ſucceſs) and hope I ſhall be ſo happy " as not to diſappoint your expectations in any re- " ſpect."

" I hope not, (replied ſhe) and, as I confide in the " character given me of you, have not yet expreſsly " ſtipulated any conditions; but you muſt not imagine " upon that account that I do not expect any. You " know the nature of the command which you are to " go upon. It is to attack the enemy's trade, and

" plunder

" plunder their ſettlements in thoſe places where you " expect to meet the leaſt reſiſtance. Now, ſir, in exe- " cuting ſuch a commiſſion you muſt certainly make " many valuable captures; three fourths of the clear " produce of which I ſhall expect, for procuring you " the command, the reſt you may divide among your- " ſelves. If you approve of this, your commiſſion " ſhall be made out directly."

" I am too ſenſible of your ladyſhip's favour (return- " ed he) to diſlike any thing you propoſe. As for my- " ſelf, I have nothing in view but honour; and that, " at leaſt, I ſhall have an opportunity to acquire."

" Honour, Sir! (interrupted ſhe haſtily) How do " mean? If it is by fighting with the fleets of the ene- " my, you quite miſtake the matter. Inſtead of that, " you muſt uſe all poſſible care to avoid them, and not " run the hazard of diſappointing the deſign upon " which you are ſent, and loſing the fleet entruſted to " you in attempting to acquire honour. Acquire pro- " fit, and leave honour to the enemy."

" Yes!——But pleaſe your ladyſhip, (anſwered the " ſeaman, who did not ſo well reliſh the latter part of " his inſtructions) How ſhall I anſwer that to the king? " I ſhall be broke with infamy."

" Never fear, (replied ſhe:) do you take care to " make a profitable cruize, and I will protect you " from all danger of that kind; and perhaps make " intereſt alſo to have you ſent out again with a greater " force, when you ſhall not be under a neceſſity of " obſerving ſuch caution." Encouraged by this, the admiral promiſed to obey her orders, and went away with an high heart.

The admiral was ſucceeded by the farmer-general, who, advancing to her ladyſhip with a confident air, " I have taken the liberty (ſaid he) to bring your lady- " ſhip a ſuit of jewels, which I hope you will like. I " ſhould not preſume to offer them, if they were not " fit for the firſt ſovereign in Europe to wear."

" You are always very obliging; (anſwered her " ladyſhip, caſting her eye careleſsly upon the jewels " as ſhe took them) they are indeed pretty enough."

" Your

" Your ladyſhip does not ſee half their beauty ; (re-
" plied the farmer) if you will pleaſe to look a little
" cloſer, you will have a better notion of their va-
" lue."

" I beg your pardon, ſir, (returned ſhe, taking no-
" tice of the paper they were wrapped in, which was
" a bill of exchange for a great ſum of money) I like
" them extremely. They certainly are very fine ; and
" I muſt ſay that you have the politeſt method of pre-
" ſenting any thing of any man I know, I have wanted
" to ſee you for ſome time, to let you know that your
" propoſal is accepted of."

" I am much obliged to your ladyſhip (anſwered
" he) and ſhall ſtrive to merit your favour on all oc-
" caſions ; though really I am not quite free from
" apprehenſions of meeting with ſuch difficulties in
" this affair, as may make it much leſs advantageous
" than is imagined. The people are ſo exhauſted by
" the multitude of their taxes, that they declare them-
" ſelves unable to pay any more, and in their deſpair
" expreſs a diſcontent little ſhort of rebellion ; ſo that
" I believe we ſhall be under a neceſſity of calling for
" aſſiſtance from the army to levy any thing."

" And you ſhall have it, (replied her ladyſhip) when-
" ever you require it. That is a proof of their being
" exhauſted, indeed ! If they are in want, let the men
" all liſt in the army, that is the proper place for them ;
" and then the women and children will have enough.
" Don't you ſhew the leaſt tenderneſs to one of them.
" It only encourages the reſt. Their complaints are
" all feigned. If they were in ſuch diſtreſs as they
" pretend, their ſpirits would hardly be ſo high.

" I ſhall punctually obſerve your ladyſhip's direc-
" ons, (returned he) and depend on your protection,
" if any thing ſhould happen.

The counſellor of the parliament ſucceeded the farmer-general, to whom her ladyſhip addreſſed herſelf with as little ceremony as the others. " Sir, (ſaid
" ſhe) I have conſidered of what you ſaid to me, and
" fear the ſcheme is impracticable. Your people ſeem
" too refractory to be influenced by ſuch methods."

" Madam,

"Madam, (answered he) I must beg leave to say, "your ladyship's apprehensions are groundless. I "know the temper of every man among them, and "what will prevail on each. If you please to make "the experiment, I will answer for the event."

"Well, sir, (replied she) then it shall be so, and you "shall have the place on the terms proposed; though, "if your scheme succeeds readily, I shall expect a far-"ther consideration, as it will then be much more va-"luable."

"Your ladyship (returned he) may depend on my "obedience to any thing you require."

"That's true, (added her ladyship, calling him "back just as he was going out of the room) there is "one thing which I had like to have forgot mention-"ing, though indeed it was plainly implied in what we "said. It is likely that the jesuits will offer large sums "of money, to avert the storm that threatens them. "That, you know, I am to share in, equally with the "other perquisites of your place."

"Why—really—(said he) if your ladyship insists "upon it——; though, as it is but a contingency, it "is difficult to bring it within any rule."

"Sir, (answered she warmly) I do and will insist "upon it; and think it odd for you to make any dif-"ficulty."

"No, Madam! by no means! (replied he) I make "no difficulty at all; but till your ladyship had de-"clared your pleasure, it was impossible for me to "foresee it. Is there any thing else?

"No, (returned her ladyship) not that I recollect "now. If I should think of any thing farther, I will "let you know."

The next who was admitted to an audience was the nobleman who had held the bason to her ladyship, as she washed her hands. "I am sorry my lord duke, "said she, (as soon as he had paid his compliments) "that I have been obliged to make you wait so long; "but business, my lord——"

"Your ladyship (answered his grace, with the ut-"most complaisance) need be under no concern. I

"am

" am no ſtranger myſelf to the urgency of ſtate-
" affairs."

" Well, my lord, (ſaid ſhe) at length I have the ho-
" nour to congratulate your grace on your ſon's ſuc-
" ceſs. His majeſty made many difficulties at firſt;
" but they all vaniſhed when I told him of the match
" between the marquis and my couſin. He ſaid, he
" could refuſe nothing to any one who was to be allied
" to me."

" My ſon is in duty obliged to his majeſty, (replied
" his grace) and I have a juſt ſenſe of your ladyſhip's
" favour."

" I am glad, my lord, (continued ſhe) that your
" good ſenſe and prudence have enabled you to con-
" quer that abſurd pride of family, which makes fools
" of ſo many. Though your ſon's intended wife is
" the daughter of a mechanic, ſhe is my kinſwoman;
" and, if live, I'll make the proudeſt peer of France
" glad to marry into my family. The king is the
" fountain of nobility, and what he can beſtow they
" ſhall not want."

" Your ladyſhip's own merit (anſwered he cooly)
" makes it an honour to any family to be allied to you.
" I will ſend my ſon to return his thanks to your la-
" dyſhip, and receive your farther commands.

The biſhop was now the only one who remained; but her ladyſhip had already had too much buſineſs that morning, and therefore ſent him word, that ſhe could not ſee him till ſome other time.

CHAP. XIII.

Make hay while the ſun ſhines. All go to the market where they can have moſt for their money. A converſation concluded in character.

THESE important matters being thus diſpatched, the cardinal came out of his cloſet, and ſmiling at her ladyſhip, " It is a pity (ſaid he) that your la-
" dyſhip cannot publicly aſſume the office of prime
" miniſter,

" miniſter, you do buſineſs in ſuch a maſterly man-
" ner."

" Why, (anſwered ſhe, laughing) I have no notion of
" making many words, when I have reſolved upon a
" thing; nor of uſing the agency of others in what I
" can do better myſelf. They always make ſuch
" bungling work, that I have no patience with them.
" Plain-dealing prevents miſtakes. Beſide, they cannot
" get ſuch good terms as I do. People chaffer and
" higgle with them, who do not in the leaſt object to
" what I require. As to the breach of decency, I de-
" ſpiſe it. I ſtudy my own conveniency, not other
" people's opinions."

" Your ladyſhip judges very rightly; (replied he)
" great minds are above the rules which direct the
" conduct of their inferiors."

" Well! (reſumed her ladyſhip) Do not you think
" now that all theſe perſons are properly qualified for
" my purpoſe? I hold my power by a very precarious
" tenure, and therefore think it prudence to make the
" moſt of it while it laſts. What is the intereſt or honour
" of the kingdom to me? I know that with the king's
" favour I gained the hatred of every other perſon in
" the kingdom, and that on the loſs of that I ſhould
" feel all the weight of the latter; to avoid which I'll
" take care to provide what ſhall make my retreat
" elſewhere comfortable, for I will never ſtay a mo-
" ment after I become ſubject to their inſults; and
" for that very reaſon I ſend my money before me as
" faſt as I can."

" Then your Ladyſhip (replied the cardinal) is re-
" ſolved on going to England!"

" Moſt certainly; (ſaid ſhe) What other place could
" I expect the ſame ſafety or ſatisfaction in? A perſon
" that has but money enough to give into the extrava-
" gancies of the mode will never want an agreeable re-
" ception there. As to the difficulty you made about
" going with me, there is nothing in it. There will
" no more objection be made to your character than to
" mine. As ſoon as the novelty is worn off, we ſhall
" paſs as unnoticed as we can wiſh, and meet as much
" reſpect as we can pay for. The pope himſelf, ſo-

" lemnly

" lemnly as he is abjured, would find a welcome in " England for his money; ſo that you need not be ſo " delicate and timorous. It is but laying aſide your " red hat, and you need apprehend nothing."

" Your ladyſhip (anſwered the cardinal, who did not " much like the manner in which ſhe ſpoke theſe laſt " words) cannot think that I ſhould make any difficul- " ty of following you to the remoteſt part of the " world. The happineſs I enjoy in your favour ex- " ceeds every other conſideration. As to thoſe people " who have been with you this morning, is it your " pleaſure that I ſhould mention them to the king; or " will your ladyſhip rather do it yourſelf? Thoſe I " mean whom the importance of the employments " which you deſign them for makes it neceſſary to " obſerve ſuch caution about. There will be great mur- " muring at their promotion among the nobility who " have applied for thoſe commands."

" Let them murmur on; (replied ſhe haughtily) I " deſpiſe every thing in their power to ſay or do! I'll " humble their pride, by ſhewing them how little I re- " gard them. I made the duke wait ſo long to-day, to let " him ſee that his ſon's marrying my relation gave him " no conſequence with me. As to this affair, I'll " ſpeak to the king myſelf, for form-ſake; but you " may order their ſeveral commiſſions to be got ready in " the mean time."

" Really, (returned the cardinal) I think you gave " his grace ſufficient reaſon, even after he was ad- " mitted, to ſee that you held him not in very high " reſpect. But how came you not to ſee the biſhop? " Had he any particular buſineſs?"

" Buſineſs! (ſaid her ladyſhip, after a loud laugh) " Yes; and that no leſs than a cardinal's hat, I aſſure " you. Becauſe I got you one for gartering my ſtock- " ings, he founds his pretenſions on buckling my " ſhoes. Hah! hah! hah! It is true he offers fair. " He undertakes to be either for or againſt the Jeſuits, " for or againſt the *conſtitution*; in ſhort, any thing, " or every thing I pleaſe, now, or at any other " time."

" Pious

"Pious prelate! (added the cardinal, after he had "joined in the laugh) He has a moſt convenient con- "ſcience, and cannot fail to riſe in the church. I pre- "ſume you have not rejected ſo ample offers."

"I am not reſolved about him yet; (replied ſhe) I "muſt try his patience here firſt for a while. When I "have broken him ſufficiently by attendance, I'll then "conſider whether it is proper to gratify his ambition, "or give him a refuſal."

Their political conference was broken off here, by one of a ſofter nature. The cardinal was too gallant not to dedicate ſome part of his private audience to love, and her ladyſhip too tender to refuſe his addreſſes. After ſome time ſpent in dalliance, the cardinal recollected that the king was by that time returned from hunting, and accordingly haſtened away to wait upon him; while her ladyſhip prepared to receive the viſit which his majeſty never failed to pay her every day.

CHAP. XIV.

A curious, though not an uncommon picture. Play a trout properly, and you'll catch it. The faſcination of eaſe.

IT was not very long before the king arrived. From the nature of their connection I expected that their meeting would be attended with the warmeſt expreſſions of paſſion; but there appeared no traces of any ſuch thing between them. The king entered her apartment with a liſtleſs, indifferent air, as if he knew not what of elſe to do with himſelf; and lolling into a chair, ſcarce returned any anſwer to her enquiries after his health; which ſhe alſo expreſſed with the coolneſs of compliment and words of courſe.

When he had ſat, or rather dozed thus for ſome time, in a kind of ſuſpenſion of thought, he ſeemed as it were to awake, and turning to his miſtreſs, gave her an account of his morning's ſport, as particularly as if ſhe underſtood it as well as himſelf; while ſhe

liſtened to him with the greateſt attention and appearance of pleaſure, aſking him every now and then ſuch queſtions as ſhould lead him to repeat thoſe paſſages in which ſhe ſaw he took the moſt delight.

When his ſpirits were ſomewhat raiſed in this manner, and the lady thought him in a proper humour for her purpoſe, ſhe artfully turned the converſation upon buſineſs. "I hope (ſaid ſhe, as if careleſly and only "from common curioſity) that your majeſty has receiv-"ed agreeable accounts from your armies this morning. "I hear there are expreſſes arrived."

"Ay! (anſwered he) ſo the cardinal informed me; "but I ſuppoſe they have brought nothing material, "as he ſaid no more."

"I cannot help thinking it very ſtrange, (con-"tinued ſhe) that ſuch powerful armies as your majeſty "ſends into the field do not bear down all before them. "Your enemies are no way able to oppoſe them with "equal force. I ſhould fear that there muſt be a fault "ſomewhere."—— Then obſerving that he ſeemed to liſten to her with ſome attention, "Is your majeſty "certain (continued ſhe) that the generals to whom "you intruſt the conduct of your armies are equal to "the charge, or at leaſt that they do not protract "the war, for the ſake of continuing in their com-"mands? Some thing or other muſt be the reaſon of "it."

"Why, yes! (replied the king) I have often "thought ſo myſelf; and therefore I believe I'll "even now make a peace, and ſo have done with "them all."

"A peace! (exclaimed ſhe ſuddenly, equally "ſurpriſed and alarmed at the word) I did not know "that your majeſty had any thoughts of peace; to be "ſure, it is moſt deſireable—on proper terms."

"I can't ſay (returned he) that I ſhould have any "thought of the kind in the preſent ſituation of affairs, "if ſo many miſcarriages did not in a manner force me "to it. It is very diſagreeable to be diſappointed in all "my great deſigns, and that after ſo vaſt an expence "of blood and treaſure."

"Diſappointed!

"Diſappointed! (returned her ladyſhip, who now "took her cue) Your majeſty can never be diſappoint-"ed in any deſign, till you are pleaſed to drop it. In-"ferior princes, who want power to execute their will, "may be diſappointed; but not a monarch, whoſe "word is a law to millions."—Then raiſing her voice, and aſſuming an air of indignation, "A peace! No! "(continued ſhe) Your majeſty will never think of a "peace, till your enemies are brought to beg it on their "knees. It were beneath the dignity of your crown, "and a leſſening of your honour. As for the trifling "ſucceſſes, which have dejected ſome of your own "ſubjects as much as they have elevated the inſolence "of your enemies, one campaign, properly conducted, "will effectually reverſe them. Shall it be ſaid that "the mighty kingdom of France, governed by a prince "equally the delight of his people, and the terror of "his foes, was obliged to receive the law from a few "mechanic iſlanders?"

"But what can be done to prevent it (anſwered he) "rouzed from his lethargy by the ſpirited manner in "which ſhe ſpoke). They tell me, that my revenues "are quite exhauſted, and my ſubjects crying out for "peace."

"Who tells your majeſty ſo? (anſwered ſhe) A "daſtardly ſlothful ſet, who regardleſs of your glory, "think of nothing but enjoying in luxurious eaſe "the fortunes they have amaſſed by every iniquitous "means. The revenues of a king of France can ne-"ver be exhauſted, while his ſubjects have a penny left. "All the wealth in your kingdom is yours. You are not "obliged to beg from your people, as the king of "England does. As to their ſeditious cries for peace, "if your majeſty was to pay attention to them, you "would never carry on a war; and for their wants, "they are all feigned. Look around your court, look "at thoſe very people (traitors I had almoſt called "them) who tell you ſuch ſtories, and ſee whether any "thing like want appears about them. Perhaps they "mean that the populace is diſſatisfied, becauſe they "cannot live in ſuch luxury as they do themſelves. If "they really do want, why do not their compaſſionate

" advocates assist them out of their abundance, with-
" out applying to your majesty? Are you only to suffer
" for the wants of the people? Must your glory, your
" honour be given up, to save the superfluous wealth of
" your nobles? The very thought is treason; and no
" loyal subject would harbour it himself, much less pre-
" sume to suggest it to your majesty. Every one who
" mentions peace till your enemies are humbled, and
" all your great designs accomplished, is a traitor to
" your interest and glory?"

" But if I continue the war, (said the king) how
" can I be sure of better success than I have met
" hitherto?"

" Change the persons who have the conduct of the
" war, (answered her ladyship, who had now drawn
" him to the point she wanted) and never doubt of the
" success. You have hitherto employed the nobility, who
" look upon the command of fleets and armies as their
" birth-right, and consequently take no pains to acquire
" that military knowledge which alone gives a just title
" to command, and promises success; but upon any
" misfortunes, though evidently occasioned by their
" own errors, grow weary of the war, and advise
" peace. I would remove them all, and employ only
" those who have given instances of merit equal to
" such a trust; and who, having no dependance but
" upon your majesty's favour, shall omit nothing
" possible to obtain it; nor, when their own ambition
" is satisfied, insolently presume to advise your majesty
" to sacrifice your glory to their ease."

" But where (replied he) shall I find such persons?
" I know of none."

" There are enough, (returned she) if your majesty
" pleases to make use of their service. I myself could
" at this very time name both a general and an
" admiral, for whose success I would be security to
" your majesty: and as to your revenues being ex-
" hausted, and your parliament uneasy, I have just
" now been talking with a counsellor, who undertakes
" to make the latter as implicitely submissive to your
" will as you can desire; as I also know a farmer,

" who

" who will make no excuſes of the people's incapacity " to pay your majeſty's taxes. All the difficulties " which thoſe peace-makers talk ſo much of are owing " ſolely to their own miſmanagement; and they are " unfaithful ſervants, who make ſo many obſtacles to " obeying your commands. When the proud lazy " nobles ſee that you can be better ſerved without " them, their inſolence will be humbled, and they will " ſtrive to merit the employments which now they in " a manner demand as their due."

" Well! (ſaid the king, who was now worked up " to the proper pitch) Be it ſo then! Let thoſe people " whom you ſpeak of be employed. I am reſolved " I will hear no more of peace, till I have accom- " pliſhed my deſigns. I will not ſubmit my will to " their's, nor poſtpone my glory to ſuch mean conſi- " derations."—Then, riſing from his chair in a heat, he expreſſed ſeveral ſentiments of magnanimity and heroiſm, as he walked about the room, till, cooling from his paſſion, he ſunk into his former ſerenity, and, returning to his chair, took a nap, to dream of conqueſts and glory, and compoſe his ſpirits for his dinner; while his miſtreſs diſpatched a billet to the cardinal, to let him know that ſhe had ſettled every thing, and he might give their ſeveral com- miſſions to the perſons ſhe had appointed in the morning.

" By what deſpicable agents (ſaid I to myſelf, turn- " ing away in diſguſt) does Heaven work the moſt " dreadful events! How weak is the thread by which " a mighty people are guided! At length I ſee the " myſtery of favouritiſm. To leave the mind ab- " ſolutely at eaſe, watch its ruling paſſions, and, " without ſeeming to have any thing elſe in view, " artfully ſuggeſt the objects of one's own deſigns, " as the means of their gratification. My ſoul is " ſick of vice and folly. I'll ſeek relief in that happy " land where a free people is governed by a king who " is himſelf free, before ſuch manifold abuſes of the " bleſſings of Heaven, as have for ſome time engroſſed " my attention, make me hate my own nature, and

" abjure the name of man."—Saying this, I *wiſhed* " myſelf directly into England.

CHAP. XV.

The ſcene changed. A pleaſing proſpect ſuddenly over-caſt. An eaſy way to get rid of a wrangler, with a comfortable plaiſter for a broken head. He that throws dirt always fouls his fingers.

ON my arrival in England, I found myſelf near the ſeat of a nobleman of the firſt rank, in that part of the iſland which lay next to France, not having thought of any particular place when I *wiſhed* myſelf from thence.

The largeneſs of the houſe, and the flouriſhing condition of the extenſive demeſne around it, ſhewed the wealth of the owner, as the ſmile of content on the faces of his tenants proved his generoſity and juſtice. Induſtry procured plenty, and liberty ſweetened at the ſame time that it ſecured enjoyment.

Struck with the contraſt between this, and the ſcenes I had lately ſeen, I ſhared ſympathetically in the general joy; and in the honeſt pride of my heart reſolved to pleaſe myſelf with taking a more particular view of the man whoſe virtues diffuſed ſuch happineſs around him. But what was my ſurprize and diſappointment, to find the proſpect overcaſt where I expected to have ſeen it brighteſt! In his own family, and where his more immediate preſence ſhould have operated with the greateſt force, ambition had baniſhed harmony, and poiſoned every breaſt with animoſity and rancour.

The flames of this diſſention, which had long been ſmothered, burſt out with the moſt ridiculous violence, juſt at the time I entered. Though ſuch a domeſtic ſcene as this was a deſcent from thoſe *great* ones which I had lately been engaged in obſerving; yet, as it diſplayed the inconſiſtency of the human heart in a new light, I thought it merited my attention.

The

The occaſion of the breach was this: One of the lord's agents, who, by the activity and ſanguineneſs of his temper, had in a manner engroſſed the whole management of his maſter's affairs, had taken it in his head to go to law with one of the principal gentlemen in the neighbourhood, from an apprehenſion that he intended to take the part of a couſin of his, with whom his lordſhip had had a long ſuit for encroaching upon his ſide of the common.

The agent had conducted this ſuit with equal judgment and ſucceſs, and at a very great expence, for it was not his diſpoſition to ſtarve any cauſe he took in hand; foiled his adverſary in all his attempts, and not only recovered from him the places he had unjuſtly poſſeſſed himſelf of, but alſo obtained ſeveral decrees for coſts, by which he turned him out of ſo many other parts of his eſtate, that he had not left him a penny to fee an attorney to carry on the ſuit any longer, though his proud and litigious temper would not permit him to give it up.

Matters were in this ſituation, when the agent propoſed filing a bill directly againſt the couſin, who (he ſaid he had received undoubted intelligence) had entered into a private agreement with the other to ſupply him with money to go on with his law-ſuit, and aſſiſt him alſo with his intereſt to recover his loſſes. This was a direct breach of a former agreement between him and his lordſhip, by which he had obliged himſelf not to meddle in the diſpute at all; the agent was for falling upon him without any ceremony, alledging, that it was much better to be plaintiff than defendant in any ſuit; as muſt certainly be their caſe if they were not before-hand with the other, who was at that very time preparing to attack them, as appeared by ſeveral late inſtances of his behaviour.

To this propoſal his lordſhip did not think proper to give a determinate anſwer, till he ſhould conſult with the reſt of his tenants and ſervants; as by their leaſes, they were all bound to defray the expences of any ſuits which were for the general good of the eſtate. But when the agent acquainted them with his deſign, though he ſupported it with very ſtrong reaſons, and

which in the ſequel proved to be well founded, they were all of a different opinion, and ſaid, it would be very imprudent to intangle themſelves in a new diſpute before they were out of the old, eſpecially as they were already at a greater expence than they could well bear.

The agent, whoſe temper was too warm to brook oppoſition, without any reſpect to his maſter's preſence, flew into a violent paſſion, and called them a parcel of poor-ſpirited trimming fellows, who would loſe a pound to ſave a penny. They were not behind-hand with him in abuſe, but ſaid, that he was a hot-headed beggarly upſtart, who, having no fortune of his own to loſe, cared not what expence or danger he drew others into.

The lord thought it but juſt, in ſuch a caſe as this, to follow the opinion of the majority, and therefore rejected the agent's propoſal. But he did not give it up on that account; but reſolved to try another method, by which he did not doubt of carrying his point. The great ſucceſs with which he had managed his maſter's buſineſs, ever ſince he had been employed, had made him ſuch a favourite with the tenants, and given him beſide ſo great a conſequence in his own eyes, that he thought his lordſhip could not do without him, and would therefore ſubmit to any thing rather than part with him. Full of this opinion, he went to him next morning, and giving him up his keys, in a kind of pet, told him, he was ſorry he could not ſerve his lordſhip any longer, as he thought proper to prefer other people's advice to his.

His lordſhip, as if he had been prepared for the thing, received the keys very calmly, and telling him he was alſo ſorry to loſe ſo good an agent, diſmiſſed him moſt politely, with thanks for his paſt ſervices.

This was a ſtroke the other was not prepared for. He ſtood thunder-ſtruck for ſome moments; then, burſting into a flood of tears, kiſſed his lordſhip's hand paſſionately, and, declaring himſelf overcome by ſuch goodneſs, ſaid, he was ready to ſpend the laſt hour of his life in the ſervice of ſo kind a maſter. The conſequence of this he thought would have been, that his lordſhip would directly return him his keys, and reinſtate

inſtate him in his employment, for he was far enough from deſigning to reſign it: but he found himſelf diſappointed in this alſo. The lord much as he valued him for his abilities and honeſty, both of which were unqueſtionable, had for ſome time felt the warmth of his temper, not without uneaſineſs, and was glad of ſo fair an opportunity of getting rid of a ſervant who had ſhewed on many occaſions, as well as this, that he meant to be maſter; not doubting but he had others in his family capable of managing his affairs with equal fidelity and judgment.

The ſituation of the late agent on this occaſion may be eaſily conceived. He retired to his own houſe, and throwing himſelf on his bed, gave his mind up to the moſt mortifying reflections. But what he felt from his own thoughts was nothing to the vexation he received from others. Such an affair could not in the nature of things be long kept a ſecret. The moment it came to the ears of his relations, and dependants, that he had loſt his employment, they all flocked about him, croaking like ſo many ravens about a carrion: ſome of them aſking impertinent queſtions, others giving abſurd advice; this upbraiding him with his raſhneſs, that accuſing his maſter of ingratitude; and all lamenting the diſappointment of the hopes they had built on his favour, till their noiſe and nonſenſe quite turned the poor man's head; the conſequence of which was, that in his delirium he wrote a letter to the clerk of the pariſh, which he was to read at the veſtry, giving as a reaſon for his throwing up his employment, that his lordſhip truly would no longer ſubmit to be guided by him; and therefore he did not think it proper to ſerve him any longer.

This effectually clinched the affair. If his maſter had even been inclined to over-look what had paſſed and take him into his ſervice again, the folly and inſolence of this letter put it out of his power; as it would have been plainly acknowledging, that he reſigned himſelf abſolutely to his guidance.

The late agent's enemies did not fail to exaggerate this unaccountable conduct in the moſt malicious manner; but his lord viewed it in another light, and juſtly

imputing it to madneſs, not only took no notice of it, but alſo, to comfort him in his diſtreſs generouſly gave him an annuity ſufficient to ſupport him in the rank of a gentleman, expreſsly as a reward for his paſt ſervices; and wrote a letter with his own hand to his wife, who was an high-ſpirited dame, and came from a good family, in which he ſoothed her vanity, by paying her the compliment of calling her a lady.

Though this act of bounty proceeded merely from the generoſity of his lordſhip's heart, the enemies of the late agent gave it a very different turn. The ſucceſs which the latter had had in his buſineſs, and his ſanguine profeſſions of regard for the intereſt of the tenants, had won him their confidence and favour to ſuch a degree, that they immediately looked upon his giving up his employment as a ſign that there were ſome ſchemes to their diſadvantage in meditation, which he would not join in; and, conſequently, that their intereſts would be betrayed, and the law-ſuit which he had conducted with ſo much credit, and brought almoſt to an happy concluſion, at ſo great an expence, patched up in a paultry manner, and all the money loſt.

To leſſen him, therefore, in the opinion of the populace, was conſidered as the moſt effectual method to ſtop their clamors, and diſable him from making miſchief between them and his lordſhip's ſervants. For this purpoſe, to make the news of his having got the annuity ſoon enough and ſufficiently known, the town-crier proclaimed it at the market-croſs; and it was immediately inſinuated, with the greateſt induſtry, that it was the price of his boaſted regard to the tenants; that he had ſold his influence over them, and engaged to make them approve any meaſures his lordſhip pleaſed, however contrary to their intereſt and honour.

But though this ruined his conſequence, it was far from having all the effect that was expected. The tenants ſeemed reſolved to think that their intereſt was to be ſacrificed, becauſe the perſon who ſucceeded to the management of his lordſhip's buſineſs was not immediately of their own chuſing; and therefore, inſtead of minding their work, and going to plough and cart, as they ought to do, they ſpent their time tippling in ale-

ale-houſes, and railing at the new agent, even before he had time to do any thing that ſhould ſhew whether he was capable of the buſineſs or not; and for fear this humour ſhould cool, ſome miſchief-making folks hired a pack of ballad-ſingers, to go about the ſtreets ſinging black-guard ſongs of the agent and all his friends; who, to return the compliment, got as ſcurrilous a crew as the others, who threw dirt and called foul names as faſt as they, for their lives: ſo that the whole village was in an uproar, and any ſtranger, who ſhould have heard both ſides, muſt have concluded, that there was not a man in the pariſh who was not a beggarly, louſy, lying, pick-pocket, vagabond, cheat, and ſcoundrel.

CHAP. XVI.

A receipt for popularity. Turn a caſt-horſe to graze on a common. The old ſteward acts the ſecond part to the agent's farce. An hint by the bye.

THE lord, whoſe own good-nature made him wiſh to live in harmony with all the world, was greatly vexed at ſuch ſcandalous wrangling thus under his noſe; not that he knew it all either: the new agent, who from a long acquaintance had a particular influence over him, let him hear no more of it than he thought proper, contriving to keep every one from him who ſhould ſay a word which he did not dictate; ſo that his lordſhip was made to believe, that all the diſturbance and abuſe came from the other ſide, and was levelled at him, as well as his ſervants.

Though all the ſervants were glad of the late agent's diſgrace, in hopes of ſharing ſome part of that power which he had engroſſed ſo entirely to himſelf, that they were no more than meer cyphers in the family, the one who rejoiced moſt openly, was the old ſteward.

He had been many years a faithful ſervant, to the beſt of his knowledge and abilities, to his lordſhip's family; and though he was never thought to be ſo clear-headed or reſolute in the management of affairs as the late agent,

gent, yet he was very uſeful in ſome things. He had made a conſiderable party among the tenants, for this lord's father when he came firſt to the eſtate, to which he was apprehenſive of having his title diſputed, by the generous manner in which he gave his beef and beer among them, for he was very well to-paſs in the world, and never failed to treat the mob with a bonfire and a barrel of ſtingo every now-and-then; by which means he alſo won their hearts ſo, that he had always a party among the pariſhioners, to chooſe what officers he bade them, ſo that he was able to carry any point he pleaſed at the veſtry, which, to do him juſtice, was ever what his lordſhip directed.

By this extravagant way of living it is true, he had gone behind hand a good deal, but he never ſtopt for that, he had ſtill ſomething left; and the ſtewardſhip, which he had had ſo long that he looked upon it as his own, brought him in a good penny beſide, that enabled him very well to live on at his old rate.

The imperious manner in which the late agent behaved, had made the ſteward long wiſh to be rid of him; but he did not know how to bring it about; and, eſpecially at this time, he would not even attempt it, for fear of giving any hinderance to his lord's affairs, which the other managed ſo well: but when he ſaw it thus done to his hand he could not contain his joy, but ran up and down to every ſervant in the houſe, from the butler to the ſcullion, poking his noſe in their faces, and ſhaking hands with them on their happy deliverance. Coming among the reſt to the new agent, and addreſſing him in the ſame manner, "my good "friend, (returned the latter dryly) take care. Do "not run mad with joy to-day, nor with grief to-"morrow."

The ſteward's heart was too full to take notice of this ſpeech now, but he underſtood it when it was too late. I have obſerved that the new agent was in particular favour with his lord. Though getting rid of that over-bearing wrangler was a great point gained, it was far from being all that he had in view. The ſtewardſhip was the thing he had fixed his heart upon. It was the firſt place in rank in the ſervice, and, by the

the command of the caſh, gave a power of every thing to one who had ſpirit to exert it; which he was reſolved to do to the utmoſt extent, and not be encroached upon and brow-beaten by any under-ſervant, as the other had been.

But, though he was ſure of getting the place from his lord when it ſhould be vacant, the long ſervices of the old ſteward, and the intereſt which his hoſpitality had acquired him among the tenants, from the wealthieſt of whom he had always found means to borrow any money his lord wanted, till the rents came in, made him think it neceſſary to proceed with addreſs, in getting him turned off. For this reaſon he paid him uncommon compliments, and let him go on juſt as he pleaſed, in expectation of his doing ſomething, now that he was freed from reſtraint, that might give a colour for removing him; but, whether by chance or deſign, he diſappointed his ſchemes, and proceeded ſo regularly that he could take no hold of him.

This obliged him to change his meaſures. Accordingly he gave orders to the receivers under the ſteward, (ſome of whom, though brought in by him, and under the greateſt obligations to his bounty, baſely betrayed him, the moment they ſaw him totter in his place) to perplex the buſineſs of his office as much as poſſible, and even diſpute his orders, which it was not doubted, would put him off his guard, and make him give the advantage that was ſought for againſt him, by doing ſomething irregular in his reſentment.

This ſcheme had the deſired effect though not preciſely in the manner that was expected. The ſteward, ignorant of the ſnare laid for him, in the uſual courſe of his buſineſs gave one of the attorneys, concerned in carrying on the law-ſuit, an order upon the receivers, for a ſum of money to clear off his bill of coſts. The receivers, as they had been directed, made a difficulty of paying it without an expreſs order from his lordſhip. This was a direct attack upon the ſteward's authority. He ran inſtantly to the lord, and ſputtering out his ſtory as well as his paſſion would permit him, demanded that thoſe inſolent fellows ſhould be diſcharged

charged directly, or he could not do his buſineſs any longer.

The lord, who by the bye was prepared for this ſecond part of the agent's farce, anſwered him careleſsly, that he was ſorry to loſe ſo old a ſervant; and, turning about, walked away, humming a tune. The ſteward, who had lived in a kind of familiarity with the late lord, could not bear ſuch a ſlight; he left the room directly, and ran about the whole houſe, telling every one he met how ill his lordſhip had uſed him.

But he ſoon found that he had more cauſe of complaint than he knew of; for the very next morning his letter of attorney was ſuperſeded, and the ſtewardſhip given to the new agent, who thus got the whole buſineſs into his own hands, having put a creature of his own into the agency, who dared not to diſobey his orders in any thing.

It is not eaſy to deſcribe the old ſteward's aſtoniſhment at ſuch an unexpected ſtroke. However, he preſerved the dignity of his character much better than the late agent had done; for when he waited upon his lordſhip, to give him up his keys, &c. he made no mean attempts to recover his favour and keep his place; and when the lord in the goodneſs of his heart, offered him an annuity alſo, being unwilling that he ſhould want in his old days, he refuſed it with diſdain, declaring it ſhould never be ſaid, "that old "*True-penny*, who had ſpent ſo many pounds in good "beef and ſtrong beer, in his lordſhip's ſervice, was "glad to take up with a paultry annuity at laſt."

Such a return for his labour and expence ſhould have been ſufficient to open his eyes to the folly he had been ſo long guilty of, and have taught him to live frugally and quietly the remainder of his days; but the habit had taken too faſt hold on him to be ever ſhaken off. The moment he went home to his own houſe, he gathered all his old pot-companions and trencher-friends about him, and fell to carouſing as uſual, flattering himſelf with a fooliſh hope, that they would ſtand ſo firmly by him at the next veſtry, that his lord ſhould not be able to have his buſineſs done,

done, and therefore muſt be glad to give him his place again.

While he ſquandered away the remains of his ſubſtance in this idle manner, and his new friend the late agent (for ſociety in diſgrace had united them) ſat brooding over his reſentment, and meditating ſchemes of revenge, the new ſteward was far from enjoying his triumph in happineſs. The fall of his predeceſſor, who had ſo long thought himſelf as firmly fixed as man could be, was a warning to him; and though he took all poſſible care to ſecure himſelf, by filling every place in the family down to the very ſtable-boy, with his dependants, and letting no body, as I have obſerved before, come near his lord, who he was not ſatisfied was abſolutely in his intereſt, yet his fears every moment formed new dangers to torment him; and he could not ſee his lord ſmile upon the moſt devoted friend he had in the world, without feeling a jealouſy of having his own arts played upon himſelf, and being ſupplanted in his turn as he had ſupplanted the others.

However groundleſs theſe fears were at firſt, they ſoon threatned to realize the dangers which were only of their own creation. That openneſs and gayety of temper, which firſt gained him his lordſhip's favour, gave place to gloomy ſilence and reſerve; and the univerſal benevolence and philanthropy which gave irreſiſtible charms to his converſation, and commanded the eſteem of every good mind, were ſoured into jealous envy, and ſuſpicion, that ſickened at the mention of a virtuous action.

CHAP. XVII.

An holiday, and a jolly day. A ſumptuous feaſt, and a raree-ſhew.

SO many ſucceſſive inſtances of folly, which could thus poiſon a profuſion of happineſs, and turn it into miſery, filled me with the moſt melancholy reflections, but I was ſoon diverted from them, by ſomething of a leſs ſerious nature.

The

The conſtable of the village in which the lord's houſe ſtood, in conformity to old cuſtoms, made a feaſt at this time for his lordſhip and his whole family, to which he ſent them a ſolemn invitation by the pariſh-officers. Such a ſcene promiſed ſome amuſement at leaſt. I therefore returned with the officers who had come upon this important errand, deſirous to ſee the whole proceſs of ſo extraordinary an affair.

As the feaſt was to be given at the joint expence of the village, the principal inhabitants had aſſembled at the conſtable's houſe, and were ſitting over a pot of beer, waiting for the return of thoſe who had been ſent with the invitation; though the whole was a thing of courſe, their anxiety was ſo great that not one of them could ſpeak a word till their arrival: the moment they entered the room, all the reſt laid down their pipes, adjuſted their perriwigs, and wriggling their chairs nearer to the table, liſtened to the account with open mouths, and looks of the profoundeſt ſagacity.

"Well, gentlemen, (ſaid the conſtable, who ſat in "an arm-chair to ſhew his authority) ſince his lord-"ſhip has condeſcended to accept of our invitation, "we ſhould take care that every thing is prepared in "the beſt manner for his reception. There will be "many things wanted to make a proper appearance "on ſuch an occaſion, and no one would ſtop at a "trifling expence, eſpecially as the money will be laid "out among ourſelves.

This ſpeech opened every mouth in the room at once. "We ſhall all want new cloaths," cried the taylor.

——"New ſhoes,"—ſaid the ſhoe-maker.

——"New ſtockings,"—ſaid the hoſier.

——"New wigs,"—ſaid the barber.

——"Our horſes muſt be ſhoed,"—ſaid the farrier.

——"Our houſes repaired,"—ſaid the bricklayer.

——"Our chimneys ſwept,"—ſaid the chimney-ſweeper.

——"Our vaults emptied,"—ſaid the night man.

——"We muſt have a ſermon,"—ſaid the curate.

——"A ſpeech,"—ſaid the veſtry-clerk.

——"A

——" A vomit, in caſe of repletion,—ſaid the doctor.
——" A clyſter."—ſaid the apothecary.
——" A coffin,"—ſaid the undertaker. In ſhort, every perſon preſent aſſerted the want of ſomething in his own way, to make the entertainment compleat; and the leſs neceſſary it was, the louder they roared.

When they had all bawled themſelves hoarſe, and the conſtable, by repeated thumps with his fiſt upon the table, obtained leave to ſpeak, " Silence, gentle-" men, (ſaid he) we ſhall never do any thing at this " rate. You are all for providing other things before " we have fixed upon the victuals. Let us ſettle " about them firſt."

This word raiſed a tumult, ten times greater than the former; every one in the room roaring out at once for ſome particular diſh, either that it was his trade to provide, or which he was fond of himſelf.

The butcher bawled out, Beef.—
The Poulterer fowls.—
The fiſhmonger.—fiſh—
—" A turtle,"—ſaid an alderman.
—" A ragou,"—ſqueaked a Frenchman,
—" Pickled herrings,—belched Mynheer.
—" Potatoes,"—cried an Iriſhman.
—" An haggis,"—ſaid a Scot.
—" Leek-pottage,"—ſputtered Taffy. In a word, they all raiſed their voices with ſuch vehemence, not one attending to what another ſaid, that ſince the building of Babel, there was not ſuch a ſcene of confuſion.

At length, the conteſt grew ſo high that they were juſt ready to fall together by the ears, when the conſtable, who ſat all the while fretting his guts to fiddle-ſtrings at this interruption of his ſpeech, which he looked upon as an inſult to his authority, put a ſtop to the whole tumult by an accident. " Fire and fury! " (exclaimed he, raiſing his voice as loud as ever " he was able) Are you all mad?"

The word *fire*, which was all they attended to, filled them with affright. They thought the houſe was on fire, and repeating the cry with equal vehemence, they overturned the table, ſpilled the beer, and tumbling over one another, made the beſt of their way out.

As ſoon as they were undeceived, they returned into the room, and having recovered themſelves a little by the help of a freſh ſupply from the ale-houſe, the conſtable, compoſing himſelf into proper dignity, reſumed his ſpeech: "I ſay, gentlemen, (ſaid he) that, "if we go on in this manner, it is impoſſible for us to "conduct this affair with due decorum. We had better chuſe out a ſet of us who underſtand theſe matters, "to agree upon what is proper; and becauſe there "will be a great many things wanted beſide victuals "and drink, that no buſineſs ſhould be overlooked, it "will be right to have one of every trade choſen, and "then there can be no miſtakes."

This motion was univerſally approved, and accordingly they proceeded directly to make the choice; but in this they were very near falling into as great confuſion as before, every one being ambitious of the honour. At length, however, and with difficulty, it was ſettled; and then the ſelected few withdrew to the next ale-houſe, to conſult undiſturbed upon the affair.

When they were ſeated and had ſmoaked a whiff or two, to ſettle their heads, the conſtable, who by his office was one of the number, opened their deliberations.' "Gentlemen, (ſaid he, puffing out a pil-"lar of ſmoak) I believe I may ſay, without vanity, "that there is no one in this company who underſtands "theſe matters better than I do: I keep a good houſe "myſelf, an hot joint every day, and roaſt and boiled, "both, on ſundays; beſide, my wife, it is well "known, was bred up in a gentleman's family, and "there learned a proper notion of doing things gen-"teely. It is my opinion, therefore, that you leave "the *whole* to me, and I will prevail upon her to give "me advice.

"With your leave, Mr. conſtable, (anſwered a per-"ſon who ſat oppoſite to him, and heard him out "with great impatience) though it be your luck to be "in office this year, there are others in the pariſh who "keep as good houſes as you; and I believe my dame "alſo has as good an opportunity of knowing theſe "matters as another: I ſerve two or three gentle-"men who keep French cooks, and ſhe never goes to

"their

" their houſes with goods, that ſhe does not learn ſome " new piece of cookery from them; for ſhe is a well " ſpoken body, and always aſked to ſit down among " the upper ſervants; and then ſhe is ſo fond of practi- " ſing what ſhe thus picks up, that I hardly ever know " the name of what I eat; but ſhe tells me they are " quite the mode, and ſo I ſubmit; though in truth, " I cannot ſay but I ſhould often prefer a cut of honeſt " old England; in my opinion there is nothing beats a " roaſt ſir-loin."

This eloquent ſpeech was followed by one as eloquent from every one preſent, declaring his own ability for this important affair, and putting in his claim to it. At length, when all ſaw that not one would give up his pretenſions to another, they came to an agreement, that each ſhould draw a bill of fare according to his taſte and judgment, out of which they imagined they ſhould certainly be able to make a proper choice.

Accordingly, they all went to work; and the ſtreams which flowed from every mouth, while they were writing, proved with what candour they ſet down the things they liked beſt, and how glad they ſhould be to eat them.

The bills of fare, produced upon this occaſion, ſhewed that the Engliſh were not degenerated, in their ſtomachs at leaſt, from their mighty anceſtors. Buttocks upon buttocks, and ſirloins without number.—Legs of pork, and ſaddles of mutton.—Fillets of veal and flitches of bacon.—Hams by the dozen, and fowls by the groce.—Flocks of geeſe, and droves of turkies.—In ſhort, the quantities of meat, when the bills were all read over together, turned the ſtomach of every one preſent, and made them readily accept the propoſal of the man of the houſe, who undertook to furniſh out a magnificent feaſt, if they would leave the whole to him. This great point being thus happily ſettled, they ſettled their ſtomachs alſo with a glaſs of right coniac, and then retired to their reſpective homes, to give their wives an account of theſe important tranſactions.

The fuſs which was raiſed among the females upon this occaſion, is not to be deſcribed. All their finery

was

was immediately drawn forth, and examined; and then ſuch conſultations, and diſputes with one goſſip or another; ſuch a clatter with mantua-makers, and milleners, putting lappets to this, and flounces to that, altering and turning, to ſet all things in order for making a proper appearance before my lord and my lady, that every houſe in the whole village was a ſcene of litter and diſtraction, from that till the day of the feaſt; many a poor tradeſman ſacrificing more than a year's profit of his buſineſs to his wife's vanity. Not that the huſbands entirely neglected to adorn themſelves either; but as their wives care was chiefly about their tails, theirs was confined to their heads, upon which every one heaped a bundle of grey hairs, as an emblem of his wiſdom and experience, more huge than ever grew upon the oldeſt goat on *Gilead*; he that peeped out of the largeſt fleece thinking he cut the moſt reſpectable figure.

As for the feaſt, the ale-houſe man was not a moment at a loſs in providing it. He had formerly been ſcullion in a gentleman's kitchen, ſo that he was not utterly unacquainted himſelf with the naſty ways of toſſing up nice diſhes: and now, with the help of an old *French woman* who ſold *Bef-à-la-mode* in a cellar, a *German* who made *Bologna* ſauſages, and a *Jew* who travelled about the country with *ginger-bread* and *cheeſe-cakes*, he made up a ſufficient number of *things* with hard names, to ſatisfy the vanity of the entertainers, and poiſon all their gueſts, had they been fools enough to taſte them; baniſhing the wholeſome victuals of the country to the tables of the ſervants, as coarſe and unfaſhionable; and giving nothing in the way that God made, or nature required it for nouriſhment and health.

Nor were the decorations leſs elegant and grand than the feaſt. As every trade in the pariſh had a repreſentative in the ſet, to whom the management of matters was committed, it may be thought that they had a proper underſtanding among themſelves, and did not neglect any article, however unneceſſary and even abſurd, which could poſſibly be foiſted in to ſwell their reſpective bills.

CHAP.

CHAP. XVIII.

" *Impreſſes quaint capariſons, and ſteeds;*
" *Baſes, and tinſel trappings; gorgeous knights,*
" *Then marſhall'd feaſt*
" *Serv'd up in hall, with ſewers and ſeneſchals.*

AT length the much wiſhed-for day arrived. Words are too weak to convey an idea of the noiſe, hurry, and confuſion, which reigned through the whole village; it ſeemed as if chaos was come again. The ſtreets, the lanes, the tops of the houſes were filled with gaping crouds, who left their houſes, at the firſt dawn of the morning, to ſecure the moſt convenient places where they might ſtand faſting all day, to ſee others go to a feaſt, in the afternoon. Nor were the happy few, who were admitted to the envied honour of ſeeing them eat, more provident. The thought of ſuch a ſight took away their appetites; and beſides, they could not ſpare a moment from the important work of dreſſing, to take the leaſt refreſhment.

Tired of ſuch complicated folly, I turned to his lordſhip's houſe, to ſee in what light he, and his attendants, looked upon this grand affair. My former knowledge of his natural good ſenſe made me judge that he was above being infected with ſuch abſurdities. I was not deceived. He looked with pity upon the extravagance and folly of his tenants, at the ſame time that he received every teſtimony of their attachment with pleaſure. But his ſervants were far enough from being ſo cool. The paſſion for ſeeing, and being ſeen, raged as violently in them as in the villagers themſelves, and produced effects to the full as ridiculous.

When it was time for his lordſhip to go to this grand feaſt, he was ſummoned by a proceſſion, from the village, who came to wait upon him. The extravagancies ſhewn upon this occaſion exceed deſcription; *devices without deſign, antics and emblems, deſtitute of meaning, humour, or ingenuity*, led the van; *aſſes in fur'd-gowns, and lambs in paſte-board armour*, marched lovingly together. *Fools, from the hand of nature*, drop'd their

" their

their broad ſneers, and grin'd as ſavages; in a word, every guiſe, that folly could put on, without even attempting to mimick reaſon, made up the motley cavalcade, and kept the croud agape.

When they had expoſed themſelves in this manner through the whole village, they uſhered their gueſts into the place appointed for their entertainment, where they were marſhalled according to their different ranks. I went with the croud, and took my ſtation in the place from whence I could moſt conveniently ſee all that paſſed.

The numbers of every age, ſex, and rank, which I ſaw around me, preſented ſuch a complicated ſcene, that notwithſtanding the extraordinary powers confered upon me by my guide, my eyes were dazzled, my head grew giddy, and I was unable to view it with that diſtinctneſs which alone could give me pleaſure. I hung down my head, diſappointed and abaſhed, and ſwelling with an hopeleſs ſigh, "O that I had my kind "guide here now (ſaid I) to deliver me from this con-"fuſion and diſtreſs, by directing my attention to the "objects moſt worthy of it, and enabling me to over-"look every thing elſe, as he did before."

I had ſcarce uttered theſe words, when raiſing my eyes, I ſaw, to my inexpreſſible joy, my guide ſtanding before me. "I heard your wiſh (ſaid he, ſmiling at "my ſurprize) and am come to gratify it. I ſee your "ſenſes ſink under the preſſure of ſuch a multitude, "and variety of objects."—Saying this he touched my eyes once more with his wand, when inſtantly the miſts which ſwam before them were diſpelled, and I beheld all things with the greateſt clearneſs and accuracy.

When I had indulged my curioſity for ſome time in gazing idly round me, "The ſcene before you (ſaid "my guide) is a juſt repreſentation of the world in "which you are. This truly may be called, *The "Paradiſe of Fools*. You have ſeen with what eager-"neſs and pains theſe people prepared themſelves for "this great occaſion; with what anxiety they panted "for the arrival of this moment; and you now ſee to "what a wiſe end! In ſuch purſuits is the life of man, "in general, conſumed. He looks forward to ſome

"particular

" particular object, paints it in the colours moſt pleaſ-
" ing to his imagination ; and then, full of the idea,
" ſlights the enjoyment of every thing elſe, and fixes
" his happineſs on the attainment of this ; but when
" he has ſucceeded, when that for which he ſo long
" ſighed, ſo eagerly laboured, is at length in his poſ-
" ſeſſion, his wiſhes are as unſatisfied as ever, and he
" finds it is no more than *gaping at a feaſt, which others*
" *are eating.*

" The perſons who compoſe this croud are princi-
" pally the inhabitants of the village, and the ſervants
" and attendants of the lord and his lady. The dif-
" ferent purſuits of theſe two claſſes of people uſed
" formerly to create as great a difference in their
" manners and appearance ; but of late the caſe is
" quite altered ; the bounds, which were wont to
" ſeparate them are for the moſt part broken down,
" and they intrude into each other's provinces without
" diſtinction ; his lordſhip's ſervants, and the gentle-
" men of their neighbourhood practiſing every mean
" craft to get money, for which they were accuſtomed
" to deſpiſe and ridicule the villagers ; as theſe, in
" their turn, affect all the follies and vices of the
" faſhion, and with an aukward profuſion run into the
" expences and extravagancies which uſed to mark the
" character of the others. Hence you ſee tradeſmen
" keep hounds and running horſes, and their wives go
" as fine as ladies ; while gentlemen turn ſtock-job-
" bers, and compound their debts to cheat their
" creditors : and this is the reaſon of that odd contraſt,
" that contradiction of character in every face you
" meet.

" Juſt as theſe general reflections are, they will be
" ſtill more convincing when confirmed by particular
" inſtances. Obſerve that overgrown heap of morta-
" lity who ſweats beneath the load of her lace and
" jewels. From the ſplendour of her appearance,
" you might reaſonably conclude that ſhe was a per-
" ſon of the firſt rank ; but examine her nearer, and
" you will ſee that the meanneſs of her looks ſullies
" the luſtre of her diamonds, and her overacted airs

" of

" of gentility ſhew that ſhe is not in her natural " ſphere.

" She was the daughter of a country farmer, who " tho' he had ſeveral good farms of his own, was ſo " bad a manager that he never could keep a penny " in his pocket. To prevent his poſterity's feeling " the ſame inconveniencies, he married his daughter " to that perſon, who ſits neither aſleep nor awake in " yonder corner, a ſhop-keeper in the village, that ſhe " might be able to go to the till, and take out money, " whenever ſhe pleaſed. For ſome time they had " good buſineſs, and went on very well, till he unluc- " kily got in with ſome of his lordſhip's people, whom " he muſt immediately imitate in all their ways, " drinking and carouſing at every public houſe in the " pariſh; while his wife, not to be leſs genteel than " he, ſcraped an acquaintance ſome how at a puppet- " ſhew with one of her ladyſhip's maids, from whom " ſhe learned all thoſe fantaſtic airs, and became ſo " fine a gentlewoman, that ſhe would ſcarce vouch- " ſafe to take the leaſt notice of the green-grocer's or " haberdaſher's wife, at the next door, or indeed any " of her old neighbours in the village, with whom ſhe " had been intimate before. The conſequence of this " was, that while ſhe was learning faſhions, among " her ladyſhip's maids, and he tippling at the tavern " with my lord's men, or perhaps treating them at his " own houſe, his ſhop was neglected, and his buſineſs " left at ſixes and ſevens.

" But their folly is ſtill aggravated by this cir- " cumſtance, that the perſons, for the ſake of whoſe " company they do all this, laugh at them the whole " time, and would not fail to turn their very ruin into " ridicule. Of this they both have had inſtances e- " nough to open the eyes of any who were reſolved " not to ſee. One or two of theſe may not be unen- " tertaining.

" As the wife's education had been entirely in the " country, her father took pleaſure in ſeeing her practiſe " all the rural ſports he had formerly excelled in him- " ſelf; by which means ſhe could ſoon cudgel, vault, " and play at cricket as well as any of the ruſtic ſwains

" around

" around her. Of theſe polite accompliſhments ſhe " could not forbear boaſting, in the pride of her heart, " to her new acquaintance; who, to humour her va- " nity, and expoſe her folly, not only ſeemed to ap- " prove of them, but alſo miſchievouſly encouraged " her to diſplay her dexterity at them in public com- " pany, while, under a ſneer of ſeeming applauſe, " ſhe joined in the general laugh againſt her.

" There is nothing that betrays a weak head, into " more or groſſer abſurdities, than imitation. The " great emulation among the female ſex at preſent is, " who ſhall gather the greateſt number of perſons, no " matter whether of their acquaintance or not, or " how infamous in life or character, provided they " dreſs well, and will game, at thoſe nocturnal meet- " ings, called with emphatical propriety, *Routs*.

" As this woman's new acquaintance was particular- " ly famous for the multitudes that always aſſembled " on theſe occaſions, ſhe too muſt have her *Routs*, to " ſhew her politeneſs and importance. An affair of " ſuch conſequence required much deliberation. " Whom to invite, and where to put them, were " the two material queſtions. The way to the parlour " was through the ſhop; that therefore would not do " by any means; and the room up-ſtairs, which for " faſhion-ſake was called the dining-room, was ſo " little, that three females in full dreſs could not " move in it together.

" After much conſultation, a lucky thought at " length removed both the difficulties. As the route " was deſired out of pure reſpect to her new acquain- " tance, ſhe judged that it would not be proper to " invite any perſon to it, who was not a fit compani- " on for her. This reduced the number to the con- " ſtable's wife, and two or three more, and even theſe " were deſired to come without their hoops, that " they might not incommode her, a compliment, that " it was thought could not fail to pleaſe her. Theſe " difficulties being thus happily got over, the lady " was applied to, to fix her own time, and cards of " invitation ſent accordingly to the reſt of the intend- " ed company.

" But an unlucky accident had like to have ſpoiled " all, in the very critical minute. When the dining- " room was ſwept out clean, and lighted up in rea- " dineſs, the miſtreſs of the route went down, and " ſat in the parlour to be at hand to receive her prin- " cipal gueſt, before whoſe arrival ſhe did not think " it proper that the reſt ſhould go up ſtairs. While " ſhe waited thus, with heart pit a pat, for the rap " at the door, the apprentice, who had put on his " ſunday-cloaths to officiate as a ſervant out of livery " on the occaſion, happened to peep into the dining- " room, and not ſeeing a great chair at the upper " end of it, as he had obſerved in the club-room at the " alehouſe where he uſed ſometimes to go for his maſ- " ter, he concluded it was forgot in the hurry. He " reſolved therefore to correct ſuch an over-ſight, " without ſaying any thing of the matter, that the " ſurprize might enhance his merit with his miſtreſs: " accordingly he would not go down for his maſter's " ſmoaking-chair, that ſtood by the kitchen fire, but " opening the bed-chamber to look for one there, he " unluckily caſt his eye on the night-chair, by his " miſtreſs's bed-ſide, and never conſidering what " it was, brought it out, pan and all as it ſtood, and " placed it in ſtate at the upper end of the dining- " room.

" He had ſcarce finiſhed this notable piece of ma- " nagement, when a thundering at the door proclaim- " ed the lady's arrival, to the whole neighbourhood. " The new-made groom of the chambers inſtantly " flew to his poſt, happy in the thought of what he " had done, and held open the door, while his miſ- " treſs ſhewed her gueſts up ſtairs.

" The lady, who of courſe led the way, no ſoon- " er entered the room, than ſhe was ſtruck with the " ſight of the uncouth piece of furniture. Her deli- " cacy inſtantly took the alarm, ſhe puckered her noſ- " trils up to her eyes, and turning away, exclaim- " ed in a voice of diſguſt, *Lard!* where am I got " to."

" The miſtreſs of the *route*, who brought up the " rear, and had not yet come into the room to ſee

" the

" the horrid ſight, nor heard diſtinctly what the lady " ſaid, imagined ſhe was taken ſuddenly ill, and ran " up to her to know what was the matter. *Lard!* " woman! (ſnuffled her ladyſhip through her hand- " kerchief, which ſhe held to her noſe) where have " you brought me? What is that?

" It is impoſſible to expreſs the aſtoniſhment and " confuſion of the other, when ſhe ſaw the unfortu- " nate chair. Ruined and undone! (exclaimed ſhe, " as ſhe fainted away on the floor, where ſhe lay for " ſome time before ſhe could be brought to her- " ſelf.)

" In the mean while one of the company, perceiv- " ing the cauſe of all this confuſion, ordered it to be " taken away, and aſſuring her ladyſhip, that it muſt " have been brought there by ſome miſtake, as ſhe " herſelf had been in the room but a few minutes " before, when ſhe could vouch that there was no " ſuch thing to be ſeen, her ladyſhip was pacified; " and, when the miſtreſs of the houſe at length reco- " vered, condeſcended to comfort her, and even ſtaid " four minutes longer than ſhe had deſigned (for ſhe " had many viſits to make that afternoon, and could " not poſſibly ſit down to cards) to ſhew that ſhe was " not offended; though, notwithſtanding all her good- " nature, ſhe told the whole affair, with ſeveral in- " genious illuſtrations of her own in every company ſhe " went into that night; which was the real motive of " her being in ſuch haſte to go away.

" But this ridiculous end of an affair, that coſt the " perſon before us ſo much anxiety, was not ſuffi- " cient to make her ſee her folly. She goes on ſtill " in the ſame ſtrain of aukward imitation, ſacrificing " every ſolid happineſs of life to the abſurd vanity of " ſtriving to appear in a character for which nature " never deſigned her."

CHAP. XIX.

In what the great are eaſieſt to be imitated. This humble ambition more dangerous, if leſs ridiculous, in man than in woman. Another interview with a couple of old acquaintances.

" NOR is her huſband more fortunate in his at-
" tempts of the ſame kind. Behold him yon-
" der, dozing off his laſt night's debauch. The vir-
" tues of the great are generally above the ambition
" of their inferiors; but their follies and vices are of
" eaſy imitation. By theſe they deſcend to the level
" of the loweſt part of the human ſpecies, who,
" proud to reſemble them in any thing, take every op-
" portunity of aping their example. Hence thoſe un-
" natural inconſiſtencies, which offend reaſon in every
" view of life. Servant-maids in ſilk gowns, and coun-
" teſſes drinking gin. Tradeſmen keeping whores,
" and lords riding races.

" The bloated features and burſting bloodſhot eyes
" of this perſon ſhew how eagerly he imitates his bet-
" ters in the moſt beaſtly vice that can diſgrace a ra-
" tional being; but his ambition ſtops not here. Re-
" ſolved to be upon an equal footing with the free-
" holders of the manor, he has made intereſt to be
" put upon the jury of the court-leet, that he may
" have an opportunity of diſplaying his abilities and
" conſequence.

" In ſpeculation, it muſt appear advantageous to
" have the trades-people admitted thus to ſhare in the
" government of the manor, as they ſhould natural-
" ly be ſuppoſed to underſtand their own myſteries
" beſt, and for that reaſon be moſt capable of making
" ſuch regulations as ſhould promote trade, as well
" as for their own intereſt, moſt careful to prevent
" the land-holders from burdening it with unjuſt or in-
" judicious impoſitions.

" But experience has proved the vanity of ſuch ex-
" pectations. No ſooner can a tradeſman get upon
" the jury, than inſtead of taking care of the intereſt
" of

" of his trade, in general, he immediately enters into " a combination with the lord's ſervants; and, for " the ſake of bringing their cuſtom to his own ſhop, " aſſiſts them to carry every by-law they propoſe to " ſerve any preſent purpoſe, however ruinous in its " conſequences to the very trade in which he earns " his bread. Thus, for inſtance, a ſhoemaker, for " the ſake of ſupplying ſhoes for his lordſhip's labour- " ers, ſhall conſent to lay a tax upon leather, that " muſt ruin his craft in the end: and if they betray " their own trades in this manner, what will they " ſcruple to do to others!

" It is true, they take care to pay themſelves well " for this proſtitution; the badneſs of the goods they " ſupply giving them ſuch an exorbitant profit in their " contracts, that they expect ſoon to be, and too of- " ten really are, raiſed above the neceſſity of attend- " ing to their buſineſs, at the ſame time that the " poor labourers, who are obliged to take theſe goods " as part of their wages, ſuffer hardſhips, ſhocking to " humanity, from this double diſhoneſty.

" But juſtice obliges me to acquit the perſon who " gave occaſion for theſe reflections from all ſuch de- " ſigns. Vanity was the ſole motive for his getting " upon the jury, and in the gratification of that con- " ſiſts his only pleaſure and employment; though this " vanity is in its effect no leſs prejudicial, than the " venality of the others; for, as the ambition of his " ſhallow heart is to be upon good terms with his " lordſhip's ſervants, he never refuſes any thing they " require: ſo that the only difference between his " conduct and that of the others is, that he does " thoſe dirty jobs for nothing which they do for " hire.

" In contraſt to theſe inſtances of vicious and ab- " ſurd vanity, behold in yon tall meagre-looking per- " ſon, and his wife, who ſits behind him in the croud, " inſtances of meanneſs, equally vicious and out of " character.

" The place in which he ſtands ſhews the rank he " holds among his lordſhip's ſervants, to which he " has been raiſed, not for any perſonal merit in him-

" ſelf, or liking of his maſter, but ſolely on account " of the influence, which his wealth gives him among " the tenants; he being poſſeſſed of the greateſt pro- " perty in the whole manor.

" It has been ſaid that Heaven ſhews its diſregard " for riches, by the unworthy objects on whom they " are generally beſtowed. The remark is rather witty " than juſt; but, perhaps, there never could a ſtron- " ger inſtance be alledged in ſupport of it than this " perſon. Though his wealth exceeds not only the " wants of nature and reaſon, but alſo almoſt the ve- " ry wiſhes of avarice itſelf, his ſoul ſtill yearns for " more, with as much greedineſs as a wretch periſh- " ing of famine can for a morſel of bread. The whole " buſineſs of his days, his dreams by night, are how " to encreaſe his boundleſs ſtore, to do which there is " not a mean or iniquitous art invented by the per- " verted ingenuity of the human mind, when ſharpen- " ed and made deſperate by want, which he will not " practiſe.

" Verſed in the whole black myſtery of gaming, " how often has he drawn in unexperienced youth to " ruin? How often have the rewards earned by the " merits of illuſtrious anceſtors, the fruits of the in- " duſtry of ages, melted in the magic of his art, and " ſunk into his poſſeſſion?

" Nor is he content with this exertion of his ſkill, " which, infamous as it really is, cuſtom, that can " efface the diſtinctions of nature, has ſanctified it " with the name of *polite*. For thoſe whoſe fears " may fortunately prevent their encountering him at " his favourite weapons, cards and dice, he ſpreads " the inexplicable ſnares of uſury, keeping a public " office for lending money to all who can give him " ſecurity on every contingency of life, the chances " of which he has calculated with ſuch accuracy, " that his expectations of gain are ſeldom diſappoint- " ed. And this is the ſource of his influence, there " being few of the tenants of the manor, and more " eſpecially of his lordſhip's ſervants, who are not in " his debt. As for the place he holds in his lord's " ſervice, he ſought it only for the lucrative emolu-

" ments

" ments which attend it. Stranger to every praiſe-
" worthy ambition, he ſets honour at nought; and
" graſps even at power, only as it brings him pro-
" fit.

CHAP. XX.

He that plays at BOWLS *muſt meet* RUBS. *The biter* DRUB'D. *An old fox caught napping. A penny ſaved is a penny got. Splendid œconomy; with the unfortunate candle-adventure. A mortifying inſtance of the force of vanity.*

" IN the occurrences of ſuch a life, it is not poſſi-
" ble for all his art, conſummate as it is, to ſave
" him from ſome rubs. An inſtance in each character
" of a gameſter and an uſurer, will gratify honeſt
" indignation.

" Exerting his talents in the noble ſcience of *betting*,
" ſome time ago, at a cricket-match, a butcher, whom
" he had taken in, (for the firſt rule of gaming is,
" that it levels all diſtinctions; a porter, who can pull
" out a full purſe, being equal to a lord) was ſo pro-
" voked at being *bit*, that he reſolved to take ſatisfac-
" tion with his hands, for the miſtake of his head, and
" paid him with a hearty *drubbing*.

" Such an affair naturally made a noiſe; but the ſuf-
" ferer had the addreſs not only to evade the ſcandal,
" but even to turn it to his own advantage with his
" lord, making him believe that he had met with ſuch
" an inſult on account of his known attachment to
" his intereſt, the butcher being an avowed partizan
" of a certain gentleman's, who was at that time go-
" ing to law with his lordſhip for the beſt part of his
" eſtate.

" But he did not come off ſo much to his own ſa-
" tisfaction in an affair that happened to him, ſome
" time after, in his other capacity of an uſurer. A
" gentlemen took up at his office a ſum of money,
" payable at the death of an uncle to whom he was
" heir; for which he mortgaged the reverſion of his

" uncle's eſtate: as he did not rightly underſtand *the*
" *calculations*, he agreed to pay an exorbitant premi-
" um; but, his uncle dying very ſoon, when the uſu-
" rer went to demand his debt, the gentleman expoſ-
" tulated with him on the unreaſonableneſs of the
" terms which he had inadvertently ſubmitted to, and
" offered him the ſum he had borrowed, with an hand-
" ſome gratuity, beſide the intereſt allowed by the
" law. But the other unmoved by any thing he could
" ſay, inſiſted poſitively on his whole demand, and
" threatened to ſeize upon the eſtate mortgaged to him,
" if it was not paid directly.

" Incenſed at ſuch iniquitous extortion, the gentle-
" man had immediate recourſe to a learned practitioner
" of the law, to try if he could not have redreſs; who,
" on peruſing the deeds which had been executed be-
" tween them, found that by an overſight of all par-
" ties, the mortgage affected only a very ſmall part of
" his eſtate, which was not worth half the ſum lent,
" much leſs what was demanded; a particular ſubde-
" nomination only, which had always been diſtinctly
" known from the reſt, being named in the deeds.

" Though the gentleman was above taking any diſ-
" honeſt advantage in ſuch a caſe as this, he thought
" it juſtifiable to fight the devil at his own weapons,
" and defend himſelf by any means he could; accord-
" ingly he ſent the uſurer word, that, if he would not
" accept of his debt, with the bare legal intereſt, he
" might take poſſeſſion of the eſtate mortgaged to him,
" as ſoon as he pleaſed; but at the ſame time, let him
" know what that eſtate was.

" Surprized at ſuch a meſſage, the uſurer inſtantly
" ſent for his lawyers, who, upon conſultation, inform-
" ed him, that the affair was too true, and the miſ-
" take now irremediable; and, therefore, he muſt on-
" ly ſtrive to make the beſt he could of it. When he
" had vented his rage on his agents and lawyer, and
" curſed himſelf for confiding in them, he was not
" aſhamed to go in perſon to the gentleman, to try if
" he could not prevail upon him, at leaſt to give him
" the gratuity he had offered at firſt. But his argu-
" ments were now as ineffectual as the gentleman's had

" been

" been before; and, for once, he was obliged to take
" only his juſt debt, where he had thought himſelf ſe-
" cure of ſinking the whole eſtate.

" While he labours with this aſſiduity to heap up
" wealth by every iniquitous means, his wife is equally
" diligent in her province, practiſing every ſpecies of
" parſimony, however ſcandalous and unjuſt, to cut
" off her tradeſmen's bills, and ſhorten the moſt neceſ-
" ſary expences of life by ſaving from the very bellies
" of her ſervants; for, however her fortune may ſeem
" to raiſe her above attention to ſuch minute œcono-
" my, there is nothing by which money can poſſibly
" be got that ſhe thinks beneath her. An affair that
" happened not long ſince, will ſhew this in the ſtrong-
" eſt light.

" It has been remarked, that the moſt oppoſite and
" apparently irreconcileable paſſions often ſpring from
" the ſame cauſe, and inhabit the ſame breaſt. The
" profuſion that, in a particular manner, marks the
" character of the preſent age, is blended with an a-
" varice ſo ſtrong, as to ſeem capable of counteracting
" all its effects. An inconteſtable inſtance of this is
" the mean practice which prevails among thoſe whoſe
" elevated rank makes them lead the mode, of per-
" mitting their ſervants to receive hire from their
" gueſts. Upon this practice ſome of ſuperior œcono-
" my have improved ſo far as to lay a tax upon it, and
" bargain with their footmen to defray a great part of
" the expence of their entertainments out of theſe
" ſcandalous perquiſites.

" But even this did not ſatisfy this lady. Her rank,
" as well as her eager paſſion for play, laid her under
" a kind of neceſſity of making a ſplendid appearance,
" and inviting as much company as ſhe could to her
" gaming parties. I have obſerved that the expence
" of theſe entertainments was borne by the ſervants.
" But ſtill there was one thing which ſhe had ſet her
" heart upon, though cuſtom had not *yet* given her a
" right to it; this was the pieces of candles that re-
" mained after the company retired from her *routes*,
" which ſhe thought would ſerve in her family on or-

" dinary occaſions, and ſave the expence of buying;
" but how to get them was the difficulty, as the foot-
" men who found the lights retained them as their
" due.

" At length, one night, when the company by ſome
" accident broke up much ſooner than ordinary, ſo
" that the candles were not half burnt out, ſhe
" was not able to reſiſt the temptation, but re-
" ſolved to have them ſome way or other. Accord-
" ly, as ſoon as the hurry was over, and the ſervants,
" as ſhe thought, all gone to ſleep, ſhe ſtole out of
" her bed, and went down ſtairs, naked to her ſhift
" as ſhe was, with a deſign to ſteal them; which ſhe
" imagined ſhe might eaſily do, as the ſervants, impa-
" tient to get to reſt after their fatigue, uſed only to
" blow them out, and to leave them in the candle-
" ſticks, till they went to clean up the rooms next
" morning.

" It happened unluckily that one of the footmen
" ſuſpected ſome of his fellows had found a way of
" opening the box, in which their alms-money (for
" literally, they ſtood like beggars to receive it) was
" kept, till it was divided, and reſolved to be upon
" the watch this night to try if he could diſcover
" the thief.

" He had not waited long, when he heard his miſ-
" treſs treading ſoftly through the apartments; and
" imagining that ſhe was the perſon he watched for,
" (for there was no light to let him ſee who it was)
" he ſtood ſtill till ſhe came to him, and then, ſpread-
" ing his arms in her way, caught her, loaded as ſhe
" was with the pieces of candles, with which ſhe had
" filled the forepart of her ſhift; for ſhe had in her
" haſte, forgot to bring any thing to carry them off.

" It is eaſy to conceive her ſurprize and confuſion
" at ſuch an encounter; nor was the fellow's much
" leſs. But the diſcovery of her ſituation ſoon re-
" ſtored him to his ſenſes, and inſtantly ſuggeſted the
" method of his revenge. " And ſo, my dear, (ſaid
" he) you want wax-candles! But I'll make you pay
" for your pilfering." Saying which he prepared to
" gratify a paſſion more natural at leaſt, if not more

" delicate,

" delicate, than that which brought her into ſuch a " ſcrape.

" The lady, who could not be at a loſs to know " what he deſigned, was in the higheſt diſtreſs. Her " *virtue* inſtantly took the alarm at ſuch an attempt; " but how to avoid it was the difficulty. If ſhe ſpoke " to refuſe him, ſhe knew her voice would betray her, " and ſhe ſhould be expoſed for ever, at the ſame " time that the fear of loſing her booty prevented her " letting go her hold to ſtruggle with him, and ſtrive " to repel force by force. It is not eaſy to ſay what " reſolution ſhe would have taken in ſuch an embar- " raſſment; or, indeed, whether ſhe would have taken " any before it was too late, had not a very ſingular " circumſtance moſt unexpectedly proved the ſafe- " guard of her honour.

" The fellow had ſcarce taken her in his arms, when " the perfumes, which ſteamed from every part of " her, gave ſuch offence to his noſtrils, accuſtomed to " no ſtinks but thoſe of nature, that, his ſtomach " inſtantly turning, he diſcharged its contents full in " her face, before he had time to let her go; and " then, damning her for a ſtinking brimſtone, ſpurn- " ed her from him with abhorrence. As ſoon as ſhe " had wiped her face with her ſleeve, and recovered " her breath, ſhe picked up ſome of the candles which " ſhe had dropped, and retired, the manner of her " deliverance a good deal leſſening the pleaſure of it; " though it was ſome ſatisfaction to her, however, to " think that ſhe had preſerved her booty, and eſcaped " undiſcovered.

" But, in the latter, ſhe ſoon had the mortification " to find herſelf deceived. The fellow told the whole " ſtory, with ſome obvious additions, to all the ſer- " vants next morning at breakfaſt, when her waiting- " woman, (from whom ſhe could not poſſibly conceal " ſome part of it, as ſhe was obliged to have recourſe " to her aſſiſtance to get herſelf cleaned; though at " the ſame time ſhe gave her the ſtricteſt charge not " to mention a ſyllable of the matter, laying it upon " her huſband, who, ſhe ſaid, had drank a little too " freely the night before) her woman, I ſay, out of a

" principle

" principle of conſcience, and that none of her inno-
" cent fellow-ſervants ſhould be under ſuch a ſcandal-
" ous aſperſion, betrayed the whole ſecret to them all,
" from whom, through the channel of intelligence of
" their fraternity, it ſoon ſpread over the whole vil-
" lage.

" The feaſt, you ſee, is finiſhed, at which you muſt
" have obſerved that the hoſpitable entertainers and
" their gueſts ſeemed to have exchanged charac-
" ters; the former, willing to have ſomething for their
" money, eating as voraciouſly as if they were half
" ſtarved, and never expected to meet ſo good a meal
" again; while the latter have been wholly taken up
" in looking about them, and making good-natured re-
" marks on every thing they have ſeen. But, ſoft!
" a curious ſcene yonder demands your attention for a
" moment, after which we will return to the lady's
" huſband again, who will ſupply more matter for your
" obſervation."

Juſt as my guide ſaid this, I heard an uproar at the door of the houſe, and, turning about to ſee what was the occaſion of it, was witneſs to a ſcene ſufficiently ridiculous to have put vanity itſelf out of countenance.

As his lordſhip's late agent, who had been invited by the villagers to their feaſt, was going away, a parcel of attorneys clerks and bailiffs, who had been employed by him while he conducted the law-ſuit, gathered about him, and inſiſted on carrying him in triumph to his own houſe on their ſhoulders.

The zeal of the poor fellows on this occaſion was natural. The agent had given them conſtant employment, in which, to do them juſtice, they had earned their wages very well, and on his loſing his place they apprehended the ſuit would be made up ſome how, and they ſhould want work; they therefore took this method of teſtifying their grateful regard for him, which they imagined might alſo convey an advantageous opinion of them to his ſucceſſor; but the affected modeſty with which he faintly repelled their attempts, while the vanity of his heart gliſtened through the thin diſguiſe, ſhewed in the moſt mortifying light

" the

the inability of man's boaſted reaſon to reſiſt the impulſe of the moſt contemptible paſſions. The ſight was too painful; I turned away, vexed and diſguſted, while he went off intoxicated with their empty ſhouts and applauſe.

The tumult and confuſion at the breaking up of the company are not to be deſcribed. "You ſee (ſaid my "guide) the concluſion of an affair that raiſed ſuch "expectation. The life of man has not unaptly been "compared to a feaſt, from whence ſome depart emp-"ty, others ſatiated: and all unſatisfied and diſap-"pointed, and as impatient to get away as they were "eager to come. We will leave the entertainers to "congratulate themſelves on their elegant taſte and "judicious conduct in this important matter, to ſpread "the fame of which they have reſolved to hire the "common crier, to proclaim the bill of fare of their "ſumptuous entertainment at the market-croſs, and "follow that perſon who, as I told you, will ſoon do "ſomething that ſhall compleat his character."

CHAP. XXI.

Intereſting hints, which ſet ſome matters much canvaſſed in a new light.

AS ſoon as his lordſhip was returned home from the feaſt, his ſervants met together to conſult upon the conduct proper for them to obſerve in the preſent critical conjuncture. While theſe people are making "the unmeaning preambles (ſaid my guide) with which "the moſt urgent buſineſs muſt be uſhered in, I'll give "you a few leading hints, to enable you to enter "the readier into the ſpirit of the ſcene opening be-"fore you.

"You muſt have obſerved that the bubble of the "day, the ſubject that engroſſes the thoughts of all "the inhabitants of the manor, is the law-ſuit in "which they are at preſent engaged. About this they "are divided into two parties, directly oppoſite to each "other in their opinions; one for proſecuting it with

"the

" the utmoſt vigour, without conſidering what con-
" ſequences may attend ſuch a conduct, or ſetting any
" limits to their expectations; the other for compound-
" ing the diſpute almoſt at any rate, to ſave the ex-
" pence of carrying it on. At the head of the latter
" is the perſon whom we have followed hither; as the
" former flatter themſelves that they have the late a-
" gent on their ſide, becauſe he had conducted it with
" judgment and ſpirit, while he was in his office.

" It is hard to ſay which of theſe parties acts on the
" moſt irrational principles. The one, from a mean
" and abſurd motive of parſimony, would betray the
" honour of their lord, and the intereſt of the manor,
" the other, compoſed principally of the various re-
" tainers of the law, and tradeſmen who make an ad-
" vantage of ſupplying them with goods, on the lord's
" account, from motives equally ſelfiſh, though diſ-
" guiſed under the pompous pretext of public ſpirit,
" and a paſſion for glory, which never fail to take
" with the mob, are for puſhing on their ſucceſſes a-
" gainſt the dictates of reaſon and juſtice, magnifying
" every advantage that has been gained as of the moſt eſ-
" ſential importance, and not only graſping at more, but
" alſo inſiſting on keeping all they have gotten; while
" the former with equal ſincerity decry them as inſig-
" nificant, and not worth the trouble and expence of
" acquiring, much leſs of retaining, and therefore are
" for giving up them all indiſcriminately.

" In the ſame manner do they differ about the con-
" duct to be obſerved with ſome of their neighbours,
" who have taken part with them in the diſpute;
" theſe are for dropping them directly, and leaving
" them to ſhift for themſelves as well as they can,
" without regard to any promiſes which may have
" been made them to the contrary, or to their being
" drawn into the ſcrape, meerly becauſe of their be-
" ing ſome way connected with this manor; as the
" others are for ſupporting them, right or wrong,
" without ever conſidering whether they are able to
" bear ſuch an expence or not.

" It is obvious that the right courſe lies in the mid-
" dle between theſe opinions, could their directors di-

" veſt

" veſt themſelves of prejudice, to diſcern and find " reſolution to purſue it. As the ſuit was entered in- " to at firſt not wantonly, or from a litigious diſpoſi- " tion, but to aſſert a legal right, and recover loſſes " unjuſtly ſuffered, it would be both diſhonourable and " weak to drop it before thoſe ends are obtained; " and if in the courſe of the conteſt ſome acquiſiti- " ons have been made, which were not originally e- " ven claimed, the voice of reaſon directs to retain as " many of them as ſhall indemnify for the expences of " the law-ſuit, and diſable the aggreſſors from at- " tempting the like injuſtice for the future; as, on " the other hand, when that right is inconteſtably e- " ſtabliſhed, and not only thoſe loſſes recovered, but " alſo a ſufficient indemnification for the paſt, and ſecu- " rity againſt the future obtained, to graſp at more " inverts the nature of the conteſt, and makes thoſe " the aggreſſors who before had juſtice on their ſide.

" The ſame middle rule holds equally good in reſpect " to their aſſociates in the ſuit; ſuch of them as have " been involved in it merely on account of their con- " nection with the manor, ſhould moſt certainly be " protected; that is, if it can be done without ruin- " ing their protectors; farther than which nothing " can oblige a community to go. Where that can- " not be, ſelf-preſervation cancels every tie; and pru- " dence commands to yield to a neceſſity that can- " not be reſiſted, till an happier hour ſhall offer for " redreſſing their grievances, and making them amends " for their loſſes; and for thoſe who may have enter- " ed into the diſpute, to ſerve particular purpoſes of " their own, or for the ſake of hire, it is abuſing ho- " nour to ſay that it is any way concerned to keep " up a connection with them, one moment longer than " it is convenient. All that is neceſſary to be done " is, not to break with them without giving them " timely notice to provide for their own ſafety.

" Of this the ſteward is not inſenſible; but, though " he is ſecure of his lord's concurrence in whatever " he thinks proper to do, there are difficulties in his " way, which make him at a loſs how to proceed,

" and

" and imbitter the enjoyment of his envied power.
" The party which is for continuing the ſuit is againſt
" him of courſe, from the circumſtance of his com-
" ing into the management of affairs in the place of
" their favourite, the late agent; (as for the old ſtew-
" ard, though ſome of them perhaps have not yet for-
" got the good cheer he uſed to give them, as they
" have no opinion of his capacity for buſineſs, they
" give themſelves no great concern about his diſmiſ-
" ſion) and even the more rational of thoſe who wiſh
" to ſee the diſpute terminated, in an amicable and juſt
" manner, are afraid he will be in ſuch haſte to make
" it up, in hopes of ſecuring himſelf in his place, that
" he will not take ſufficient care of their intereſts,
" nor make the moſt of the advantages gained by his
" predeceſſor, for fear any part of the merit ſhould
" redound to him.

" Oppoſed thus by one party, and diſtruſted by the
" other, he ſtands in the utmoſt embarraſſment, un-
" able to follow the dictates of his own judgment,
" and obliged to adopt the meaſures of thoſe who
" will join with him. Theſe are they who are for
" *compounding* matters at any rate, at the head of whom
" is this perſon, who, as his great property makes a
" large portion of the expence of the ſuit fall to his
" ſhare, has ever been averſe to carrying it on, *weep-*
" *ing* over the ſucceſſes which have attended it, as
" he imagined they would raiſe the expectations of
" the tenants ſtill higher, and conſequently make the
" compoſition he wanted to bring about more difficult.

" I have drawn this ſhort ſketch, to aſſiſt your
" judgment in a matter which prejudice and party re-
" preſent in ſuch different colours. To ſome, per-
" haps, the concerns of a private manor may not ſeem
" worth ſo much trouble; but the heart of man, and
" the motives of his actions, which are the objects of
" your obſervation, are often as clearly ſhewn in ſuch
" trifles as in matters of the greateſt moment. " But
" ſoft! the grand debate begins."

CHAP.

CHAP. XXII.

Diſputes will ariſe, where every man is for himſelf. A ſure method of removing ſcruples, and reconciling oppoſite opinions. The character of the GRAND COMPOUNDER *finiſhed. The concluſion.*

COMPLIMENTS being mutually paid, and judgment paſſed upon the feaſt, and the dreſs and characters of the entertainers and their various gueſts, the company at length ſeated themſelves round a table, and the ſteward proceeded to buſineſs.

" I have deſired this meeting, gentlemen, (ſaid he) " that I may have your advice how to act in the affair " of this law-ſuit in which we are entangled. Whe- " ther it is to be carried on, or made up? and how " we are to accompliſh which ever we reſolve upon? " It is a matter of conſequence, and requires the " moſt deliberate care and attention."

" Whether the law-ſuit is to be carried on, or made " up, ſir! (anſwered the *grand compounder*) cannot " admit of a moment's doubt with any one who con- " ſiders the diſtreſſed ſituation to which we are redu- " ced by it. All our ready money is gone, and our " farms mortgaged ſo deeply that no one will lend us " any more. How then ſhould we carry it on, if we " were ſo inclined? Or, how far are we to go, even if " we were able? When firſt we begun it, we were " told that a term or two would certainly bring our " adverſary to reaſon. But we have gone on, term " after term, I don't know how long, at an expence " that no other people upon earth would be ſuch fools " as to undertake; and ſtill are as far from a conclu- " ſion as the moment we ſet out. As for the mighty " advantages, which the lawyers and their party make " ſuch a noiſe about, what have they done but filled " our wiſe heads with notions of new demands, which " our adverſary will never comply with; and we " ſhould not have dreamed of making, had it not been " for them: So that, the more advantages, as they " are called, we gain, the farther we are from the con-

" cluſion

" cluſion we wiſh for. They lawyers, indeed, have " gained advantages. They receive their fees from " us, and extort coſts from the adverſary alſo; which, " in our great wiſdom, we have given up to them, " as an encouragement to be honeſt, inſtead of reim- " burſing ourſelves with them as we ought; and " therefore they are in the right to ſpin out the ſuit " as long as they can. But I hope their reign is at " an end; and that we have ſeen our folly too plainly, " to be dupes to them any longer. My opinion, there- " fore, Mr. Steward, is, that we compound the mat- " ter directly. We muſt take care of ourſelves. *Any* " compoſition in our caſe is better than *none*.

" It is to be hoped (replied one who ſat at the other " ſide of the table, and by his green bag full of pa- " pers, appeared to be their clerk in court) that Mr. " Steward will have more regard to his own character " (a conſideration that appears to have loſt all weight " with the gentleman who ſpoke laſt) as well as to " his lordſhip's honour and the intereſt of the manor, " than to be influenced by ſuch ſordid, baſe advice. " It has been owing to ſuch ſcandalous complaints of " our inability to carry on the ſuit, that it has conti- " nued ſo long, they only having encouraged our ad- " verſary to perſiſt, not from any hope of getting the " better of us fairly, but of wearing out our reſoluti- " on; and if this is not directly betraying his lordſhip " the conſequence is juſt as bad."

So home a charge put the *compounder* out of all pa- tience. He ſtarted up ſputtering and foaming like a madman, for his paſſion had deprived him of the pow- er of utterance, and, tearing open his waiſtcoat, was going to demand inſtant ſatisfaction from his accuſer. But a gentleman who ſat at the upper end of the table interpoſed, and catching hold of his hand, " For hea- " ven's ſake, Sir, (ſaid he) how can you take notice of " what he ſays? The gentleman perhaps thinks that " he will have no more buſineſs, if the ſuit ſhould " be made up, and therefore ſays any thing to ſup- " port it. But you have a fortune of your own, " and do not depend upon the precarious income of " a place."

" Whatever

" Whatever I depend on, (returned the clerk eager-
" ly) I do not proſtitute my honour and abilities, and
" make myſelf the hackney tool of every party that
" is uppermoſt, to keep that place, changing like a
" weather-cock with every guſt of wind, and coun-
" ter-acting one day the meaſures of the laſt, as I
" happen to be ordered."

Such reflections were too general. Every mouth was inſtantly opened to reply, when the ſteward commanding ſilence, with a tone and air of authority, " I was in hopes, gentlemen (ſaid he) that you would " have thought proper to deliberate coolly on the " matter I propoſed to you; but, inſtead of that, you " have fallen out among yourſelves, and that about " nothing at all. You may all be aſſured, that what-" ever meaſures I take, no gentleman here ſhall be a " ſufferer. You, Mr. Clerk, need not be ſo warm! " If the ſuit is made up, there are other places as pro-" fitable as the one you have at preſent. I deſign to " make you firſt clerk in my own office, which I hope " will remove all your ſcruples; and on the other " hand, if it cannot be made up quite ſo readily as you, " Sir, (addreſſing himſelf to the *grand compounder*) " may wiſh, there are ways of making up to you, not " only what you may ſuffer by the delay, but alſo a " good part of what you have been out of pocket al-" ready: ſo that you had no occaſion for being ſo " much alarmed at what the gentleman ſaid, nor " ſtripping to fight with him, like a porter. Such " wrangling is moſt unbecoming gentlemen."

This ſpeech healed all animoſities, and reſtored the general harmony in a moment. The clerk bowed with a ſmile of the moſt chearful acquieſcence; and the *grand compounder*, unable to conceal his joy, blubbered out, between laughing and crying, " I am ſorry, " Sir, that I ſhould miſbehave myſelf before you; but " it was impoſſible to bear ſuch an aſperſion unmo-" ved. I am ſure I have ſhewn my attachment to " his lordſhip's honour and intereſt in many different " inſtances, in the ſeveral capacities I have ſerved him " in. When I was *cockſwain of his barge*, I obliged " his watermen to wear a particular livery, at their

" own

" own expence, and regulated their rank; and t'other " day again, when I was ſteward of the manor on " the other ſide of the river, I drove away that *ſmug-* " *gler* and his gang who put them all into ſuch a pa- " nick, by the great preparations which I made to " attack them; and even in this very affair of the law- " ſuit, I have been at greater expence than any man " in the whole manor; and it is very hard if a man " may not even ſpeak, who parts with ſo much mo- " ney for nothing. I am ſure it has gone to my heart " many a time, when I have given away the rent of " a whole farm at once! After all this, I ſay, it is " too much to be accuſed of betraying his intereſt " and honour. But, as I can depend upon your word, " I ſhall think no more of it."

When the *grand compounder* had thus unburdened his heart, the ſteward once more reſumed the ſubject of their meeting. " As for this law-ſuit, gentlemen, " (ſaid he) I own I am heartily tired of it, as I pre- " ſume every man in his ſenſes is: and am determined " to make it up as ſoon as I can, that is, without " prejudice to his lordſhip's honour and the real in- " tereſt of the manor, which, however ſome people " may pretend to diſtinguiſh between them, are eſſen- " tially one and the ſame thing. But how to bring " this about is the difficulty. The mob is intoxicated " with our ſucceſſes to ſuch a degree, that they " would be ready to drag any man through the kennel " who ſhould only mention ſtopping, though they do " not even know what they would be at, in going on. " In theſe circumſtances, I think it will be the beſt " way to let our adverſary privately know, that we " are not averſe to an accommodation; and that if " he will ſend one of his people here with ſuch a " propoſal, to give a colour to the affair, one of us " will go to him, with full power to ſettle all matters " in diſpute between us. In the mean while we muſt " let the lawyers go on, at leaſt till the end of the " term, to keep the mob in good humour; and when " the affair is finiſhed, we muſt contrive to throw " ſome new bubble or other up in the air, for them " to gaze at, which may divert their attention from e-

" very

" very thing elſe. This, gentlemen, is my opinion:
" I only am at a loſs for a proper perſon to ſend. It
" muſt be one of ſome conſequence to give weight
" to what he ſays, and who does not regard the abuſe
" and inſults of the mob, of which he will probably be
" the chief object, in the firſt ſallies of their reſent-
" ment, before there can be any thing done to ap-
" peaſe them."

" I am the man! (ſaid the *grand compounder*, ſtart-
" ing up in a tranſport) I am the man! I have given
" proof, that I defy the reſentment of the moſt de-
" ſperate mob; and no perſon's word will have more
" weight with our adverſary than mine. I am inti-
" mately acquainted with moſt of his principal ſer-
" vants, with whom I have all along kept up a friend-
" ly intercourſe; which has made him think that I
" am well inclined to his intereſt; ſo that he will have
" proper regard to every thing I propoſe. Let me
" but go; and I will undertake to ſettle every thing."

" With all my heart, Sir, (anſwered the ſteward)
" you ſhall go ſince you deſire it. But take care that
" your eagerneſs is not ſeen through, and taken ad-
" vantage of. I'll draw up your inſtructions without
" delay, and give you a ſum of money to bear your
" charges, that ſhall make you eaſy; for I know you
" are not extravagant in your expences."

" And do, pray, Sir, (added the *grand compounder*)
" add ſome little matter on my wife's account. I know
" ſhe will be for going too. It will not be thrown a-
" way: ſhe has an excellent knack at fiſhing out ſecrets,
" and will be a great aſſiſtance to me."

" Well, Sir, (returned the ſteward) we ſhall not differ
" about that. But, gentlemen, there is one thing
" more, which I muſt obſerve to you. As you all ap-
" prove of this ſtep, I ſhall expect that when the ac-
" commodation is concluded, you will all ſign it as
" well as I; for light as ſome people make of the re-
" ſentment of a mob, I do not chuſe to ſtand ſingle be-
" fore it neither."

Matters being thus ſettled, the company broke up; and the *grand compounder*, in the fullneſs of his joy, muttering to himſelf as he paſſed me, " Aye! aye!

" let

" let me alone to compound matters! I ſhall not ſtand " upon terms. *Any* compoſition is better than *none!*" I was ſo provoked at his premeditated baſeneſs, that, forgetting the poſitive injunction of my guide, I could not forbear crying out aloud, " Villain! take that!" and at the ſame time gave him a kick on the poſteriors with all my might.

But I ſoon had reaſon to repent of my raſhneſs. The whole ſcene inſtantly vaniſhed! I awoke from my *Reverie*; and found myſelf ſitting in the ſame chair, where I had forgot myſelf a few hours before, with the additional vexation of having broken my ſhin againſt the frame of the table by my inconſiderate kick.

FINIS.

10 JA 67